

# Categoricity and Stability in Abstract Elementary Classes

by  
Monica M. VanDieren

A dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment  
of the requirements for the degree of  
Doctor of Philosophy  
(Mathematics)  
in the Department of Mathematical Sciences  
of Carnegie Mellon University  
May 9, 2002

Advisor:

Professor Rami Grossberg, Department of Mathematical Sciences, Carnegie Mellon University.

Examination Committee:

Professor John Baldwin (Chair), Department of Mathematics, Statistics and Computer Science,  
University of Illinois at Chicago.

Professor Lenore Blum, Department of Computer Science, Carnegie Mellon University.

Professor James Cummings, Department of Mathematical Sciences, Carnegie Mellon University.

Professor Ernest Schimmerling, Department of Mathematical Sciences, Carnegie Mellon University.

Professor Andrés Villaveces, Mathematics Department, National University of Colombia at Bogota.

This thesis is dedicated to my daughter Ariella Ronit.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

I would like to thank Rami Grossberg, my advisor and husband, for his patient support and guidance during my Ph.D. thesis. I am also indebted to John Baldwin for his unlimited willingness to comment on and discuss preliminary drafts of this thesis through e-mail communication as well as professional visits at Carnegie Mellon University and at the Bogota Meeting in Model Theory at the National University of Colombia at Bogota. I would like to thank Andrés Villaveces for organizing the Bogota Meeting in Model Theory and for the invitation to give several talks on this thesis. Thanks also go to Andrés Villaveces and Olivier Lessmann for a critical reading of a preliminary version of Chapter II.

I would also like to thank Michaela VanDierendonck, Jonna VanDieren and Jimmy VanDieren for babysitting Ariella while I completed this thesis.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>DEDICATION</b> . . . . .	<b>ii</b>
<b>ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS</b> . . . . .	<b>iii</b>
<b>CHAPTER</b>	
<b>I. Introduction</b> . . . . .	<b>1</b>
<b>II. Towards a Categoricity Theorem for Abstract Elementary Classes</b> . . . . .	<b>14</b>
II.1 Introduction . . . . .	14
II.2 Background . . . . .	19
II.3 Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski Models . . . . .	29
II.4 Amalgamation Bases . . . . .	30
II.5 Weak Disjoint Amalgamation . . . . .	36
II.6 $<_{\mu,\alpha}^b$ -Extension Property for $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$ . . . . .	39
II.7 $<_{\mu,\alpha}^c$ Extension Property for ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$ . . . . .	49
II.8 Extension Property for Scattered Towers . . . . .	60
II.9 Reduced Towers are Continuous . . . . .	70
II.10 Relatively Full Towers . . . . .	82
II.11 Uniqueness of Limit Models . . . . .	88
<b>III. Stable and Tame Abstract Elementary Classes</b> . . . . .	<b>95</b>
III.1 Introduction . . . . .	96
III.2 Background . . . . .	96
III.3 Existence of Indiscernibles . . . . .	100
III.4 Tame Abstract Elementary Classes . . . . .	108
III.5 The Order Property . . . . .	109
III.6 Morley sequences . . . . .	112
III.7 Exercise on Dividing . . . . .	115
<b>BIBLIOGRAPHY</b> . . . . .	<b>117</b>
<b>INDEX</b> . . . . .	<b>118</b>

## CHAPTER I

### Introduction

The purpose of this introduction is to describe the program of classification theory of non-elementary classes with respect to categoricity and stability. This thesis tackles the classification theory of non-elementary classes from two perspectives. In Chapter II we work towards a categoricity transfer theorem, while Chapter III focuses on the development of a stability theory for abstract elementary classes. At the end of this chapter we provide a brief outline of the thesis.

Early work in model theory was closely tied to other areas of mathematics. Led by Robinson and Tarski, model theorists worked on generalizing known theorems about fields to arbitrary first order theories. In the sixties, James Ax and Simon Kochen found far reaching applications of model theory to the theory of valued fields. Their work on Hensel fields and  $p$ -adic numbers was used to resolve a conjecture of Artin (see [CK].) One direction of current work in model theory initiated by Tarski focuses on pure model-theoretic questions which may someday shed light on open questions in algebra and other areas of mathematics.

The origins of much of pure model theory can be traced back to one of the most influential conjectures in model theory, Łoś' Conjecture, which was motivated by an algebraic result of Steinitz from 1915. Steinitz's Theorem states that for every

uncountable cardinal,  $\lambda$ , there is exactly one algebraically closed field of characteristic  $p$  of cardinality  $\lambda$  (up to isomorphism). In 1954, Łoś conjectured that elementary classes mimic the behavior of algebraically closed fields:

**Conjecture I.0.1.** *If  $T$  is a countable first order theory and there exists a cardinal  $\lambda > \aleph_0$  such that  $T$  has exactly one model of cardinality  $\lambda$  (up to isomorphism), then for every  $\mu > \aleph_0$ ,  $T$  has exactly one model of cardinality  $\mu$ .*

This conjecture was resolved by Michael Morley in his Ph.D. thesis in 1962 [Mo]. Morley then questioned the status of the conjecture for uncountable theories. Building on work of W. Marsh, F. Rowbottom and J.P. Ressayre, S. Shelah proved the statement for uncountable theories in 1970 [Sh31].

The theorem which affirmatively resolves Łoś' Conjecture is often referred to as Morley's Categoricity Theorem:

**Definition I.0.2.** A theory  $T$  is said to be *categorical in  $\lambda$*  if and only if there is exactly one model of  $T$  of cardinality  $\lambda$  up to isomorphism.

Out of Morley and Shelah's proofs, fundamental techniques and concepts such as prime models, rank functions, superstable theories, stable theories and minimal types surfaced. Present day research in first order model theory, particularly *stability theory* or *classification theory*, would be unrecognizable without these techniques and concepts. Model theorists have used the techniques and concepts of stability theory to answer open questions in algebraic geometry.

While first order logic has far reaching applications in other fields of mathematics, there are several interesting frameworks which cannot be captured by first order logic. For example, non-archimedean fields, Noetherian rings, locally finite groups and finite structures cannot be axiomatized by first order logic. Extending the work of Erdős,

Tarski, Hanf, D. Scott, Lopez-Escobar and C. Karp, model theorists C.C. Chang and H.J. Keisler made much progress in the study of non-first order logics including  $L(\mathbf{Q})$  and  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$  [CK],[Ke1], [Ke2].  $L(\mathbf{Q})$  is an extension of first order logic with the addition of a quantifier  $\mathbf{Q}$ , where  $\mathbf{Q}$  is interpreted as *there exists at least*  $\aleph_1$ .  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$  is also an extension of first order logic allowing for countable disjunctions and conjunctions.

A major breakthrough in non-first-order model theory occurred in 1974 when Shelah answered John Baldwin's question (which was made in the early 1970s and reproduced on Harvey Friedman's list of open problems):

**Problem I.0.3.** Do there exist a countable similarity type and a countable  $T \subseteq L(\mathbf{Q})$  (in the  $\aleph_1$  interpretation) such that  $T$  has a unique uncountable model (up to isomorphism)?

Shelah's negative answer to this problem in the mid-seventies indicated a strong link between categorical theories and the existence of models in uncountable cardinals ([Sh 48] under  $\diamond_{\aleph_1}$ , [Sh 87a] under  $2^{\aleph_0} < 2^{\aleph_1}$ , [Sh 88] in ZFC, or see [Gr1] for an exposition). The solution prompted Shelah to pose a generalization of Löf's Conjecture to  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$  as a test question to measure progress in non-first-order model theory.

**Conjecture I.0.4.** *If  $\varphi$  is an  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$  theory categorical in some  $\lambda \geq \text{Hanf}(L_{\omega_1, \omega})$  then  $\varphi$  is categorical in every  $\mu \geq \text{Hanf}(L_{\omega_1, \omega})$ .*

**Remark I.0.5.**  $\text{Hanf}(\varphi)$  plays a technical role in the conjecture. Think of it as the analog of  $\aleph_1$  in Löf's Conjecture. The Hanf number of an AEC will be defined explicitly in Definition II.2.11

In the late seventies Shelah identified the notion of *abstract elementary class*

(AEC) to capture many non-first-order logics [Sh 88] including  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}(\mathbf{Q})$ . The balance between generality and practicality of AECs is witnessed by the hundreds of pages of results and the applications to problems in other fields of mathematics such as number theory [Zi]. An abstract elementary class is a class of structures of the same similarity type endowed with a morphism satisfying natural properties such as closure under directed limits.

**Definition I.0.6.**  $\mathcal{K}$  is an *abstract elementary class (AEC)* iff  $\mathcal{K}$  is a class of models for some vocabulary  $\tau$  and is equipped with a binary relation,  $\preceq_{\mathcal{K}}$  satisfying the following:

- (1) Closure under isomorphisms.
  - (a) For every  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  and every  $L(\mathcal{K})$ -structure  $N$  if  $M \cong N$  then  $N \in \mathcal{K}$ .
  - (b) Let  $N_1, N_2 \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $M_1, M_2 \in \mathcal{K}$  such that there exist  $f_l : N_l \cong M_l$  (for  $l = 1, 2$ ) satisfying  $f_1 \subseteq f_2$  then  $N_1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_2$  implies that  $M_1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_2$ .
- (2)  $\preceq_{\mathcal{K}}$  refines the submodel relation.
- (3)  $\preceq_{\mathcal{K}}$  is a partial order on  $\mathcal{K}$ .
- (4) If  $\langle M_i \mid i < \delta \rangle$  is a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and chain of models in  $\mathcal{K}$ 
  - (a)  $\bigcup_{i < \delta} M_i \in \mathcal{K}$ ,
  - (b) for every  $j < \delta$ ,  $M_j \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \bigcup_{i < \delta} M_i$  and
  - (c) if  $M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  for every  $i < \delta$ , then  $\bigcup_{i < \delta} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$ .
- (5) If  $M_0, M_1 \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} N$  and  $M_0$  is a submodel of  $M_1$ , then  $M_0 \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} M_1$ .
- (6) (Downward Löwenheim-Skolem Axiom) There is a *Löwenheim-Skolem number* of  $\mathcal{K}$ , denoted  $LS(\mathcal{K})$  which is the minimal  $\kappa$  such that for every  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and every  $A \subset N$ , there exists  $M$  with  $A \subseteq M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  of cardinality  $\kappa + |A|$ .



This has led Shelah to restate his conjecture in the following form:

**Definition I.0.7.** We say  $\mathcal{K}$  is *categorical in  $\lambda$*  whenever there exists exactly one model in  $\mathcal{K}$  of cardinality  $\lambda$  up to isomorphism.

**Conjecture I.0.8 (Shelah’s Categoricity Conjecture).** *Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be an abstract elementary class. If  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in some  $\lambda > \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ , then for every  $\mu > \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ ,  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\mu$ .*

Despite the existence of over 1000 published pages of partial results towards this conjecture, it remains very open. Similar to the solution to Löf’s conjecture, a solution of Shelah’s categoricity conjecture is expected to provide the basic conceptual tools necessary for a stability theory for non-first order logic. This enhances the potential for further applications of model theory to other areas of mathematics.

Since the mid-eighties, model theorists have approached Shelah’s conjecture from two different directions. Shelah, M. Makkai and O. Kolman attacked the conjecture with set theoretic assumptions [MaSh], [KoSh], [Sh 472]. On the other hand, Shelah also looked at the conjecture under additional model theoretic assumptions [Sh 394], [Sh 600]. More recent work of Shelah and A. Villaveces [ShVi] profits from both model theoretic and set theoretic assumptions. These assumptions are weaker than the hypothesis made in [MaSh], [KoSh], [Sh 472], [Sh 394], and [Sh 600]. Shelah and Villaveces identify the following context:

**Assumption I.0.9.** (1)  $\mathcal{K}$  is an AEC with no maximal models with respect to the relation  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ ,

(2)  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in some fixed  $\lambda > \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ ,

(3) GCH holds and

(4) a form of the weak diamond holds, namely  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_{\text{cf}(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$  holds for every  $\mu$  with  $\mu < \lambda$ .

A central emphasis of Chapter II is to resolve problems from [ShVi] and to work towards a solution to Shelah's conjecture in this framework.

Let us recall some definitions in AECs which differ from the first-order counterparts. Because of the category-theoretic definition of abstract elementary classes, the first order notion of formulas and types cannot be applied. To overcome this barrier, Shelah has suggested identifying types, not with formulas, but with the orbit of an element under the group of automorphisms fixing a given structure. In order to carry out a sensible definition of type, the following binary relation  $E$  must be an equivalence relation on triples  $(a, M, N)$ . In order to avoid confusing this new notion of “type” with the conventional one (i.e. set of formulas) we will follow [Gr1] and [Gr2] and introduce it below under the name of *Galois type*.

**Definition I.0.10.** For triples  $(\bar{a}_l, M_l, N_l)$  where  $\bar{a}_l \in N_l$ ,  $M_l, N_l \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  for  $l = 0, 1$ , we define a binary relation  $E$  as follows:

$$(\bar{a}_0, M_0, N_0)E(\bar{a}_1, M_1, N_1) \text{ iff}$$

$M := M_0 = M_1$  and there exists  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $f_0, f_1$  such that for  $l = 0, 1$   $f_l : N_l \rightarrow N$ ,  $f_l \upharpoonright M = \text{id}_M$  and  $f_0(\bar{a}_0) = f_1(\bar{a}_1)$ .

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N_0 & \xrightarrow{f_0} & N \\ \text{id} \uparrow & & \uparrow f_1 \\ M & \xrightarrow{\text{id}} & N_1 \end{array}$$

To prove that  $E$  is an equivalence relation (more specifically, that  $E$  is transitive), we need to restrict ourselves to amalgamation bases.

**Definition I.0.11.** Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be an AEC. A model  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  is said to be an  $(\mu_0, \mu_1)$ -*amalgamation base* if and only if for every  $N_i \in \mathcal{K}$  of cardinality  $\mu_i$  with  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_i$  for  $i = 0, 1$ , there exists a model  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $f_0 : N_0 \rightarrow N$  and  $f_1 : N_1 \rightarrow N$  such that the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N_0 & \xrightarrow{f_0} & N \\ \uparrow id & & \uparrow f_1 \\ M & \xrightarrow{id} & N_1 \end{array}$$

When  $\mu_0 = \mu_1 = \|M\|$ , we say that  $M$  is an *amalgamation base*.

**Remark I.0.12.** The definition of amalgamation base varies across the literature. Our definition of amalgamation base is weaker than an alternative formulation which identifies amalgamation bases with models that are  $(\|M\|, \mu)$ -amalgamation bases for every  $\mu \geq \|M\|$ . Under the assumption of the amalgamation property (that every model in  $\mathcal{K}$  is an amalgamation base), these definitions are known to be equivalent, but since we do not assume the amalgamation property, we emphasize the distinction here.

We can now define types over amalgamation bases in terms of the equivalence relation,  $E$ :

**Definition I.0.13.** For  $M, N \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  with  $M, N$  amalgamation bases and  $\bar{a}$ , a finite sequence in  $N$ , the *(Galois-)type of  $\bar{a}$  in  $N$  over  $M$* , written  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$ , is defined to be  $(\bar{a}, M, N)/E$ .

**Remark I.0.14.** Unlike the first-order definition of type, this definition depends on not only  $M$  and  $N$ , but also the class  $\mathcal{K}$ . Subtleties such as this commonly arise when generalizing first-order notions to the context of AECs. With this in mind,

consequences which may seem trivial in the first order context, will have far deeper proofs in the context of AECs.

In 1985 Rami Grossberg made the following conjecture:

**Conjecture I.0.15 (Intermediate Categoricity Conjecture).** *If  $\mathcal{K}$  is an AEC, categorical above the Hanf number of  $\mathcal{K}$ , then every  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  is an amalgamation base.*

This conjecture encouraged Shelah to produce a partial "downward" solution to the categoricity conjecture under the assumption that every model  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  is an amalgamation base [Sh 394]:

**Fact I.0.16.** *If  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in some  $\lambda^+ > \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\mathcal{K}$  satisfies the amalgamation property, then for every  $\mu$  with  $\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K}) < \mu < \lambda^+$ ,  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\mu$ .*

This result redirects future work from the categoricity conjecture to solving Conjecture I.0.15. The underlying goal of [ShVi] was to make progress towards Conjecture I.0.15 under Assumptions I.0.9. An insightful contribution of their work is the identification of the context of no maximal models as one where a deep theory can be developed without the amalgamation property.

One approach to the Intermediate Categoricity Conjecture is to see if arguments from [KoSh] can be carried out in this more general context. Shelah and Kolman prove Conjecture I.0.15 for  $L_{\kappa, \omega}$  theories where  $\kappa$  is a measurable cardinal. They first introduce limit models as a substitute for saturated models, and then prove the uniqueness of limit models. A major objective of [ShVi] was to show the uniqueness of limit models.

While there are several other valuable results in [ShVi], in the Fall of 1999, I identified a gap in their proof of uniqueness of limit models. As of the Fall of 2001,

Shelah and Villaveces could not resolve the problem. The goal of Chapter II is to prove the uniqueness of limit models.

The main attraction to solving Shelah's Conjecture is to harvest the proof in order to develop stability theory for abstract elementary classes. It is with the stability theory in first order logic that model theoretic proofs are applied to other mathematical fields. Thus having a stability theory for abstract elementary classes provides the potential for further applications of model theory to other areas.

By investigating work towards Shelah's Conjecture, one may eliminate the assumption of categoricity and develop a stability theory. The notion of splitting that appears in [Sh 394] can be studied in stable AECs. Rami Grossberg and I identified a nicely behaved, yet general class of AECs (*tame AECs* see Definition III.4.2) in which non-splitting can be exploited. We begin developing a stability theory by proving the existence of Morley sequences in tame, stable AECs. This is the subject of Chapter III.

The structure of the remainder of the thesis follows. Each chapter begins with a brief introduction and an outline of the chapter.

**Chapter II** This chapter includes a number of new theorems listed below. We solve a conjecture of [ShVi] by proving the uniqueness of limit models in a categorical AEC with no maximal models under some mild set theoretic assumptions. The uniqueness of limit models suggests that limit models are the right substitute for saturation when considering Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture.

We introduce the notion of nice towers to resolve a problem from [ShVi] in proving the extension property for towers. In order to prove the uniqueness of limit models, we prove the extension property for non-splitting types. This result does not rely on categoricity and will be used in Chapter III to prove the

existence of Morley sequences. We also identify the notion of relative fullness which is a weakening of Shelah and Villaveces' notion of fullness.

In addition, we provide an exposition of [ShVi] featuring proofs of

- Limit models are amalgamation bases using a version of Devlin-Shelah's weak diamond,
- Weak Disjoint Amalgamation and
- Stability implies a bounded number of strong types.

**Chapter III** Some background on AECs required for this chapter is included in Section II.2. Chapter III focuses on developing a stability theory for AECs. We introduce a nicely behaved class of AECs, tame AECs, in which consistency has small character. Showing that a categorical AEC is tame is a common step in partial solutions to Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture. In this chapter, we prove the existence of Morley Sequences for tame, stable AECs. Up until this point the only known proofs of existence of indiscernible sequences in general AECs has been under the assumption of categoricity using Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski models. Our proof does not use categoricity. The existence of Morley sequences suggests a notion of dividing which may be used to prove a stability spectrum theorem for tame AECs.

Here we list the main new proofs and results of the thesis. We write **new** to indicate the that the statement is new. When **new** does not appear, it is because the claim (or a variation of the claim) was made in [ShVi], but our proof is new.

**Theorem II.6.11** *The  $<_{\mu,\alpha}^b$ -extension property for nice towers.* For every nice  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in$

$\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$ , there exists a nice tower  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) <_{\mu,\alpha}^b (\bar{M}', \bar{a})$ .

Moreover, if  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is an amalgamation base and  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ , for some

$(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit,  $\check{M}$ , then we can find a nice extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a})$  such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .

Shelah and Villaveces claim the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property for all towers. Unfortunately, their proof does not converge, even for the subclass of nice towers. We use their result on Weak Disjoint Amalgamation and a new construction based on directed systems to prove this theorem.

**Theorem II.7.9 (new)** *Extension of non-splitting types.* Suppose that  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  is universal over  $N$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M, \check{M})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Let  $\check{M}$  be a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit containing  $\bar{a} \bigcup M$ .

Let  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$  be an extension of  $M$  with  $M' \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . Then there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $g \in \text{Aut}_M \check{M}$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a/g(M'))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Alternatively,  $g^{-1} \in \text{Aut}_M(\check{M})$  is such that  $\text{ga-tp}(g^{-1}(a)/M')$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ .

**Theorem II.7.11 (new)** *Uniqueness of non-splitting extensions.* Let  $N, M, M' \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$  be such that  $M'$  is universal over  $M$  and  $M$  is universal over  $N$ . If  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ , then there is a unique  $p' \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  such that  $p'$  extends  $p$  and  $p'$  does not  $\mu$  split over  $N$ .

**Theorem II.7.17** *The  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ -extension property for nice towers.* If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  is nice, then there exists a nice  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) <_{\mu, \alpha}^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}')$ . Moreover if  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is an amalgamation base such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  for some  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit,  $\check{M}$ , then we can find  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .

Building on the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property for nice towers and using the extension property for non-splitting, we resolve a problem from [ShVi] with this theorem.

**Theorem II.8.8** *The  $<^c$ -extension property for nice scattered towers.* Let  $\mathfrak{U}^1$  and  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  be sets of intervals of ordinals  $< \mu^+$  such that  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  is an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}^1$ . Let  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^1}^*$  be a nice scattered tower. There exists a nice scattered tower  $(\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^2}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) <^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$ . Moreover, if  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i^1$  is an amalgamation base and  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i^1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  for some  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit  $\check{M}$ , then we can find  $(\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  such that  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .

With this theorem, we arrive at an extension property sufficient to carry out a proof of the uniqueness of limit models. This replaces the full  $<^c$ -extension property in [ShVi] for which no proof is known to exist.

**Theorem II.9.7** *Reduced towers are continuous.* For every  $\alpha < \mu^+ < \lambda$  and every set of intervals  $\mathfrak{U}$  on  $\alpha$ , if  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is reduced, then  $\bar{M}$  is continuous. Shelah and Villaveces' proof (with or without the full  $<^c$ -extension property) does not converge as their construction is not rich enough to yield the tower that they desire. We amend their construction to prove this theorem.

**Theorem II.10.12 (new)** Let  $\alpha$  be an ordinal  $< \mu^+$  such that  $\alpha = \mu \cdot \alpha$ . Suppose  $\mathfrak{U} = \{\alpha \times \delta\}$  for some  $\delta < \mu^+$ . If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^\theta$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$  and  $\bar{M}$  is continuous, then  $M := \bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i$  is a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(\alpha))$ -limit model over  $M_0$ .

This improves a result from [ShVi].

**Theorem II.11.2** *Uniqueness of limit models.* Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal  $\theta_1, \theta_2$  limit ordinals such that  $\theta_1, \theta_2 < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ . If  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  are  $(\mu, \theta_1)$  and  $(\mu, \theta_2)$  limit models over  $M$ , respectively, then there exists an isomorphism  $f : M_1 \cong M_2$  such that  $f \upharpoonright M = \text{id}_M$ .



Shelah and Villaveces make this claim, but their proof does not converge even with the  $<^c$ -extension property, as the construction of full towers is too much to hope for. We provide an alternative proof with the identification of relatively full towers.

**Theorem III.0.5 (new)** *Existence of Morley sequences.* Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be a tame abstract elementary class satisfying the amalgamation property without maximal models. There exists a cardinal  $\mu_0(\mathcal{K})$  such that for every  $\mu \geq \mu_0(\mathcal{K})$  and every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{>\mu}$ ,  $A, I \subset M$  such that  $|I| \geq \mu^+ > |A|$ , if  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois-stable in  $\mu$ , then there exists  $J \subset I$  of cardinality  $\mu^+$ , Galois-indiscernible sequence over  $A$ . Moreover  $J$  can be chosen to be a Morley sequence over  $A$ .

This extends results from [Sh3] and [GrLe1].

**Theorem III.0.6 (new)** Suppose  $\mathcal{K}$  is a tame AEC. If  $\mu \geq Hanf(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois  $\mu$ -stable then  $\kappa_\mu(\mathcal{K}) < Hanf(\mathcal{K})$ , where  $\kappa_\mu(\mathcal{K})$  (defined in Chapter III) is a distinct relative of  $\kappa(T)$ .

## CHAPTER II

# Towards a Categoricity Theorem for Abstract Elementary Classes

### II.1 Introduction

Shelah's paper, [Sh 702] is based on a series of lectures given at Rutgers University. In the lectures, Shelah elaborates on open problems in model theory which he has attempted but which have not yet been solved. There Shelah refers to the subject of Section 13, "Classification of Non-elementary Classes," as the major problem of model theory. He points out that one of the main steps in classifying non-elementary classes is the development of stability theory. In first order logic, solutions to Łoś' Conjecture produced machinery that led to the invention of stability theory. It is natural, then, to consider a generalization of this conjecture as a test question for a proposed stability theory for AECs (Conjecture I.0.8).

Despite the existence of over 1000 published pages of partial results towards this conjecture, it remains very open. Since the mid-eighties, model theorists have approached Shelah's conjecture from two different directions. Shelah, M. Makkai and O. Kolman attacked the conjecture with set theoretic assumptions (see [MaSh], [KoSh] and [Sh 472]). On the other hand, Shelah also looked at the conjecture under additional model theoretic assumptions in [Sh 394] and [Sh 600]. More recent work of

Shelah and A. Villaveces [ShVi] profits from both model theoretic and set theoretic assumptions. These assumptions are weaker than the hypotheses made in [MaSh], [KoSh], [Sh 472], [Sh 394], and [Sh 600]. A main feature of their context is that they work in AECs where the amalgamation property is not known to hold. This chapter focuses on resolving problems from [ShVi]. Here we recall the context of [ShVi].

**Assumption II.1.1.** *We make the following assumptions for the remainder of this chapter. Fix  $\lambda \geq \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$  so that*

- (1)  $\mathcal{K}$  is an abstract elementary class,
- (2)  $\mathcal{K}$  has no maximal models,
- (3)  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\lambda$ ,
- (4) GCH holds and
- (5)  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_{\text{cf}(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$  holds for every cardinal  $\mu < \lambda$ .

Assumption II.1.1.(5) is not explicitly made in [ShVi]. They stated  $\diamond_{\mu^+}(S_{\text{cf}(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$  which is stronger than what is used. We believe this version of weak diamond is all that is needed to carry out Shelah and Villaveces' suggestion for the proof that limit models are amalgamation bases. We provide a complete proof of the theorem which uses Assumption II.1.1.(5) (see Theorem II.4.3) and give an exposition of the strength of Assumption II.1.1.5 in Section II.4.

In light of the downward solution to Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture (Conjecture I.0.8) under the assumption of the amalgamation property (Fact I.0.16), work towards Conjecture I.0.8 is directed towards deriving the amalgamation property from categoricity. The underlying goal of [ShVi] was to make progress towards the Intermediate Categoricity Conjecture (Conjecture I.0.15) under Assumption II.1.1.

Not knowing that every model is an amalgamation base presents several obstacles in applying known notions and techniques. For instance, there may exist some models over which we cannot even define the most basic notion of a type.

One approach to Conjecture I.0.15 is to see if arguments from [KoSh] can be carried out in this more general context. Shelah and Kolman prove Conjecture I.0.15 for  $L_{\kappa,\omega}$  theories where  $\kappa$  is a measurable cardinal. They first introduce limit models as a substitute for saturated models, and then prove the uniqueness of limit models. A major objective of [ShVi] was to show the uniqueness of limit models:

**Conjecture II.1.2 (Uniqueness of Limit Models).** *Suppose Assumption II.1.1 holds. For  $\theta_1, \theta_2 < \mu^+ < \lambda$ , if  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  are  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -,  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit models over  $M$ , respectively, then  $M_1$  is isomorphic to  $M_2$ .*

While limit models were used to prove that every model is an amalgamation base in [KoSh], limit models played a *behind-the-scenes* role in Shelah's downward solution to the categoricity conjecture in [Sh 394]. Furthermore, there is evidence that the uniqueness of limit models provides a basis for the development of a notion of non-forking and a stability theory for abstract elementary classes. Limit models are used in Chapter III to produce Morley sequences in tame and stable AECs. They also appear in [Sh 600] as an axiom for frames.

In all of these applications, limit models provide a substitute for saturation. Without the amalgamation property, it is unknown how to prove the uniqueness of saturated models. This may seem strange, because the proof is so straight-forward in the first order case. However, since we only have types over amalgamation bases (not arbitrary sets), the usual back-n-forth argument cannot be carried out. Even with the amalgamation property, the back-n-forth construction is non-trivial (see [Gr1] for details). Since we are working in a context without the luxury of the amalgamation

property, in order for limit models to provide a reasonable substitute for saturated models, there must be a uniqueness theorem. This is the main result of this chapter.

Here we outline the structure of this chapter:

**Section II.1** We connect the uniqueness of limit models with its role in understanding Shelah’s Categoricity Conjecture for AECs, the amalgamation property and stability theory for AECs. An outline of the remainder of the chapter is given.

**Section II.2** In this section we provide some of the necessary definitions for AECs including the amalgamation property and limit models. This background is also used in Chapter III.

**Section II.3** We provide a description of an index set used to prove the existence of universal models and to prove Weak Disjoint Amalgamation. We summarize a few properties of EM-reducts constructed with this index set. Because of categoricity, we can view every model of  $\mathcal{K}$  as a  $\mathcal{K}$ -substructure of an EM-reduct.

**Section II.4** Using a version of the weak diamond, we provide a complete proof of the fact from [ShVi] that limit models are amalgamation bases. This allows us to show the existence of limit models of arbitrary length.

**Section II.5** We provide a complete proof of Shelah and Villaveces’ Weak Disjoint Amalgamation Theorem. This theorem will be used in constructing extensions of towers. The proof uses the EM models which were described in Section II.3.

**Section II.6** In the next few sections we will be introducing classes of towers. Ultimately, we will only use scattered towers to prove the uniqueness of limit models. However, to make the proof of the extension property for scattered towers more manageable, we begin with naked towers and slowly modify them.

We will show that every nice tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  can be properly extended (with respect to the ordering  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ ) to a larger tower in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ . This closes one of the gaps from [ShVi]. The proof uses directed systems and direct limits. The reader is suggested to refer to Section II.2 for a discussion of these concepts in AECs.

**Section II.7** We define the notion of splitting for AECs and prove the extension property for non-splitting. This result does not rely on the categoricity assumption. We will use the extension property for non-splitting in Chapter III as well. We also recall Shelah and Villaveces' result concerning splitting chains (Fact II.7.6). After analyzing their proof we are able to read out a very useful corollary which serves as a replacement for the finite character of splitting in first order logic (Fact II.7.7). We then augment the towers from Section II.6 with non-splitting types. We prove the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ -extension property for this class of towers as well. The proof relies on understanding the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property from Section II.6 but does not explicitly depend on the result of II.6.

**Section II.8** We begin this section with a description of the structure of the proof of the uniqueness of limit models. We now make the final modification for towers by adjusting the index set from an ordinal to a collection of intervals of ordinals and prove the  $<^c$ -extension property for this class. This is a new theorem. The structure of the proof reflects the proofs of the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$  and  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$  extension properties.

**Section II.9** One of the problems with our chains of towers is that  $<^c$ -extensions are often discontinuous. We provide a complete proof that reduced towers are continuous. This solves another problem from [ShVi]. The proof relies on the

non-splitting results from Section II.7. We then conclude that every scattered tower has a continuous  $<^c$ -extension.

**Section II.10** Here we define strong types and provide a proof of Shelah and Villaveces' result that stability gives us a bound to the number of strong types over a given model. In this section we also introduce relatively full towers which are towers realizing many strong types. This is a weakening of Shelah and Villaveces' notion of full towers. We then show that the top of a relatively full, continuous tower is a limit model. This is a new result used in our proof of the uniqueness of limit models.

**Section II.11** Here we prove Conjecture II.1.2. The proof uses the  $<^c$ -extension property for nice scattered towers and the results on reduced and relatively full towers.

## II.2 Background

Recall the definition of an abstract elementary class from the introduction (Definition I.0.6.)

One useful example of an abstract elementary class is the following:

**Fact II.2.1** ([Sh 88] or see [Gr2]). *Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be an abstract elementary class. Then  $\mathcal{K}^{\prec\kappa} := \{(N, M) \mid M, N \in \mathcal{K}, M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N\}$  is an abstract elementary class with  $L(\mathcal{K}^{\prec\kappa}) = L(\mathcal{K}) \cup \{P\}$  where  $P$  is a unary predicate and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}^{\prec\kappa}}$  is defined by*

$$(N, M) \prec_{\mathcal{K}^{\prec\kappa}} (N', M') \Leftrightarrow (N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N' \text{ and } M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M').$$

**Notation II.2.2.** If  $\lambda$  is a cardinal and  $\mathcal{K}$  is an abstract elementary class,  $\mathcal{K}_{\lambda}$  is the collection of elements of  $\mathcal{K}$  with cardinality  $\lambda$ .

**Definition II.2.3.** For models  $M, N$  in an AEC,  $\mathcal{K}$ , the mapping  $f : M \rightarrow N$  is an  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding iff  $f$  is an injective  $L(\mathcal{K})$ -homomorphism and  $f[M] \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} N$ .

Using the axioms of AEC, one can show that Axiom 4 of the definition of AEC has an alternative formulation (see [Sh 88] or Chapter 13 of [Gr2]):

**Definition II.2.4.** A partially ordered set  $(I, \leq)$  is *directed* iff for every  $a, b \in I$ , there exists  $c \in I$  such that  $a \leq c$  and  $b \leq c$ .

**Fact II.2.5 (P.M. Cohn 1965).** Let  $(I, \leq)$  be a directed set. If  $\langle M_t \mid t \in I \rangle$  and  $\{h_{t,r} \mid t \leq r \in I\}$  are such that

(1) for  $t \in I$ ,  $M_t \in \mathcal{K}$

(2) for  $t \leq r \in I$ ,  $h_{t,r} : M_t \rightarrow M_r$  is a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding and

(3) for  $t_1 \leq t_2 \leq t_3 \in I$ ,  $h_{t_1,t_3} = h_{t_2,t_3} \circ h_{t_1,t_2}$  and  $h_{t,t} = id_{M_t}$ ,

then, whenever  $s = \lim_{t \in I} t$ , there exist  $M_s \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $\{h_{t,s} \mid t \in I\}$  such that

$$h_{t,s} : M_t \rightarrow M_s, M_s = \bigcup_{t < s} h_{t,s}(M_t) \text{ and}$$

$$\text{for } t_1 \leq t_2 \leq s, h_{t_1,s} = h_{t_2,s} \circ h_{t_1,t_2} \text{ and } h_{s,s} = id_{M_s}.$$

**Definition II.2.6.** (1)  $(\langle M_t \mid t \in I \rangle, \{h_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \in I\})$  from Fact II.2.5 is called a *directed system*.

(2) We say that  $M_s$  together with  $\langle h_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \rangle$  satisfying the conclusion of Fact II.2.5 is a *direct limit* of  $(\langle M_t \mid t < s \rangle, \{h_{t,r} \mid t \leq r < s\})$ .

In fact we can conclude more about direct limits (Lemma II.2.7). We will use this lemma in our proofs of the extension property for towers.



**Lemma II.2.7.** *Suppose that  $\langle M_t \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_t \mid t \in I \rangle$  and  $\langle f_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \in I \rangle$  is a directed system with  $f_{t,s} : N_t \rightarrow N_s$  and  $f_{t,s} \upharpoonright M_t : M_t \rightarrow M_s$ . Then we can find a direct limit  $(N^*, \langle f_{t,\sup\{I\}} \mid t \in I \rangle)$  of  $(\langle N_t \mid t \in I \rangle, \langle f_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \in I \rangle)$  and  $(M^*, \langle g_{t,\sup\{I\}} \mid t \in I \rangle)$  a direct limit of  $(\langle M_t \mid t \in I \rangle, \langle f_{t,s} \upharpoonright M_t \mid t \leq s \in I \rangle)$  such that  $M^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N^*$  and  $f_{t,\sup\{I\}} \upharpoonright M_t = g_{t,\sup\{I\}}$ .*

*Proof.* By Fact II.2.1, we know that  $\mathcal{K}^{\prec_{\mathcal{K}}}$  is an abstract elementary class. Notice that  $(\langle (N_t, M_t) \mid t \in I \rangle, \langle f_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \in I \rangle)$  is a directed system for  $\mathcal{K}^{\prec_{\mathcal{K}}}$ . By Fact II.2.5, there exists a direct limit,  $(N^*, M^*)$  and  $\langle f_{t,\sup I} \mid t \in I \rangle$ , for this system. It is routine to verify that this direct limit induces the desired direct limits for the directed systems in  $\mathcal{K}$ .  $\dashv$

We will use Lemma II.2.7 as well as the trivial observation (Claim II.2.8) in the proof of the Conjecture II.1.2.

**Claim II.2.8.** *If  $\langle N_t \mid t < s \rangle$  and  $\langle f_{r,t} \mid r < t < s \rangle$  form a directed system and for every  $r \leq t < s$  we have that  $N_t = N_r = N$  and  $f_{r,t} \in \text{Aut}(N)$ . Then a direct limit  $(N_s, \langle f_{t,s} \mid t \leq s \rangle)$  of this system is such that  $f_{t,s} : N_t \cong N_s$  for every  $t \leq s$ . Moreover we can choose a direct limit such that  $N_s = N$ .*

The following gives a characterization of AECs as PC-classes. Fact II.2.10 is often referred to as Shelah's Presentation Theorem.

**Definition II.2.9.** A class  $\mathcal{K}$  of structures is called a *PC-class* if there exists a language  $L_1$ , a first order theory,  $T_1$ , in the language,  $L_1$ , and a collection of types without parameters,  $\Gamma$ , such that  $L_1$  is an expansion of  $L(\mathcal{K})$  and

$$\mathcal{K} = PC(T_1, \Gamma, L) := \{M \upharpoonright L : M \models T_1 \text{ and } M \text{ omits all types from } \Gamma\}.$$

When  $|T_1| + |L_1| + |\Gamma| + \aleph_0 = \mu$ , we say that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $PC_\mu$ . PC-classes are sometimes referred to as *projective classes* or *pseudo-elementary classes*.

**Fact II.2.10.** [Lemma 1.8 of [Sh 88] or [Gr2]] If  $(\mathcal{K}, \prec_{\mathcal{K}})$  is an AEC, then there exists  $\mu \leq 2^{LS(\mathcal{K})}$  such that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $PC_{\mu}$ .

The representation of AECs as PC-classes allows us to construct Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski models if there are arbitrarily large models in our class.

**Definition II.2.11.** Given an AEC  $\mathcal{K}$ , we denote by *Hanf number of  $\mathcal{K}$* , denoted by  $\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ , as the minimal  $\kappa$  such that for every  $PC_{2^{LS(\mathcal{K})}}$ -class,  $\mathcal{K}'$ , if there exists a model  $M \in \mathcal{K}'$  of cardinality  $\kappa$ , then there are arbitrarily large models in  $\mathcal{K}'$ .

In Section II.3 we will see that this presentation of AECs as PC-classes allows us to construct Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski models whenever the AEC  $\mathcal{K}$  class contains a model of cardinality  $\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ . It is well known that  $\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K}) \leq \beth_{(2^{2^{LS(\mathcal{K})})}^+}$ .

Let us recall the definition of amalgamation.

**Definition II.2.12.** Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be an abstract elementary class.

- (1) Let  $\mu, \kappa_1$  and  $\kappa_2$  be cardinals with  $\mu \leq \kappa_1, \kappa_2$ . We say that  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  is a  $(\kappa_1, \kappa_2)$ -*amalgamation base* if for every  $N_1 \in \mathcal{K}_{\kappa_1}$  and  $N_2 \in \mathcal{K}_{\kappa_2}$  and  $g_i : M \rightarrow N_i$  for  $(i = 1, 2)$ , there are  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embeddings  $f_i$ ,  $(i = 1, 2)$  and a model  $N$  such that the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N_1 & \xrightarrow{\quad} & N \\ g_1 \uparrow & & \uparrow f_2 \\ M & \xrightarrow{\quad g_2 \quad} & N_2 \end{array}$$

- (2) We say that a model  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  is an *amalgamation base* if  $M$  is a  $(\mu, \mu)$ -amalgamation base.

- (3) We write  $\mathcal{K}^{am}$  for the class of amalgamation bases which are in  $\mathcal{K}$ .

- (4) We say  $\mathcal{K}$  satisfies the *amalgamation property* iff for every  $M \in \mathcal{K}$ ,  $M$  is an amalgamation base.

**Remark II.2.13.** We get an equivalent definition of amalgamation base, if we additionally require that  $g_i \upharpoonright M = id_M$  for  $i = 1, 2$ , in the definition above. See [Gr2] for details.

Amalgamation bases are central in the definition of types. Since we are not working in a fixed logic, we will not define types as collections of formulas. Instead, we will define types as equivalence classes with respect to images under  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings:

**Definition II.2.14.** For triples  $(\bar{a}_l, M_l, N_l)$  where  $\bar{a}_l \in N_l$  and  $M_l \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} N_l \in \mathcal{K}$  for  $l = 0, 1$ , we define a binary relation  $E$  as follows:  $(\bar{a}_0, M_0, N_0)E(\bar{a}_1, M_1, N_1)$  iff  $M_0 = M_1$  and there exists  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $f_0, f_1$  such that  $f_l : N_l \rightarrow N$  and  $f_l \upharpoonright M = id_M$  for  $l = 0, 1$  and  $f_0(\bar{a}_0) = f_1(\bar{a}_1)$ :

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N_1 & \xrightarrow{f_1} & N \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow f_2 \\ M & \xrightarrow{id} & N_2 \end{array}$$

**Remark II.2.15.**  $E$  is an equivalence relation on the set of triples of the form  $(\bar{a}, M, N)$  where  $M \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} N$ ,  $\bar{a} \in N$  and  $M, N \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$  for fixed  $\mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$ .

In AECs with the amalgamation property, we are often limited to speak of types only over models. Here we are further restricted to deal with types only over models which are amalgamation bases.

**Definition II.2.16.** Let  $\mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$  be given.

- (1) For  $M, N \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$  and  $\bar{a} \in {}^{\omega}N$ , the *Galois-type of  $\bar{a}$  in  $N$  over  $M$* , written  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$ , is defined to be  $(\bar{a}, M, N)/E$ .

- (2) For  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ ,  $\text{ga-S}^1(M) := \{\text{ga-tp}(a/M, N) \mid M \preceq N \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}, a \in N\}$ .
- (3) We say  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  *is realized in*  $M'$  whenever  $M \prec_\mathcal{K} M'$  and there exist  $a \in M'$  and  $N \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  such that  $p = (a, M, N)/E$ .
- (4) For  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  with  $M \prec_\mathcal{K} M'$  and  $q = \text{ga-tp}(a/M', N) \in \text{ga-S}(M')$ , we define *the restriction of  $q$  to  $M$*  as  $q \upharpoonright M := \text{ga-tp}(a/M, N)$ .
- (5) For  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  with  $M \prec_\mathcal{K} M'$ , we say that  $q \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  *extends*  $p \in S(M)$  iff  $q \upharpoonright M = p$ .

**Remark II.2.17.** We refer to these types as Galois-types to distinguish them from notions of types defined as a collection of formulas.

**Notation II.2.18.** We will often abbreviate a Galois-type  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M, N)$  as  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M)$  when the role of  $N$  is not crucial or is clear. This occurs mostly when we are working inside of a fixed structure  $\check{M}$ .

**Fact II.2.19** (see [Gr2]). *When  $\mathcal{K} = \text{Mod}(T)$  for  $T$  a complete first order theory, the above definition of  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M, N)$  coincides with the classical first order definition where  $c$  and  $a$  have the same type over  $M$  iff for every first order formula  $\varphi(x, \bar{b})$  with parameters from  $M$ ,*

$$N \models \varphi(c, \bar{b}) \text{ iff } N \models \varphi(a, \bar{b}).$$

**Definition II.2.20.** We say that  $\mathcal{K}$  is *stable in*  $\mu$  if for every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ ,  $|\text{ga-S}^1(M)| = \mu$ .

**Fact II.2.21** (Fact 2.1.3 of [ShVi]). *Since  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\lambda$ , for every  $\mu < \lambda$ , we have that  $\mathcal{K}$  is stable in  $\mu$ .*

**Definition II.2.22.** (1) Let  $\kappa$  be a cardinal  $\geq LS(\mathcal{K})$ . We say  $N$  is  $\kappa$ -*universal* over  $M$  iff for every  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\kappa$  with  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M'$  there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding  $g : M' \rightarrow N$  such that  $g \upharpoonright M = id_M$ :

$$\begin{array}{ccc} & M' & \\ id \uparrow & \searrow g & \\ M & \xrightarrow{id} & N \end{array}$$

(2) We say  $N$  is *universal over*  $M$  iff  $N$  is  $\|M\|$ -universal over  $M$ .

**Remark II.2.23.** Notice that the definition of  $N$  *universal over*  $M$  requires all extensions of  $M$  of cardinality  $\|M\|$  to be embeddable into  $N$ . First-order variants of this definition often involve  $\|M\| < \|N\|$ . We will be considering the case when  $\|M\| = \|N\|$ .

**Notation II.2.24.** In diagrams, we will indicate that  $N$  is universal over  $M$ , by writing  $M \xRightarrow{id} N$ .

The existence of universal extensions follows from categoricity and GCH:

**Fact II.2.25 (Theorem 1.3.1 from [ShVi]).** *indexuniversal over!existence of universal extensions* For every  $\mu$  with  $LS(\mathcal{K}) < \mu < \lambda$ , if  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ , then there exists  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  such that  $M'$  is universal over  $M$ .

Notice that the following proposition asserts that it is unreasonable to prove a stronger existence statement than Fact II.2.25, without having proved the amalgamation property.

**Proposition II.2.26.** *indexamalgamation base* If  $M'$  is universal over  $M$ , then  $M$  is an amalgamation base.

We can now define the central concept of this chapter:

**Definition II.2.27.** For  $M', M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  and  $\sigma$  a limit ordinal with  $\sigma < \mu^+$ , we say that  $M'$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -*limit over*  $M$  iff there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous sequence of models  $\langle M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \mid i < \sigma \rangle$  such that

- (1)  $M = M_0$ ,
- (2)  $M' = \bigcup_{i < \sigma} M_i$
- (3) for  $i < \sigma$ ,  $M_i$  is an amalgamation base and
- (4)  $M_{i+1}$  is universal over  $M_i$ .

**Remark II.2.28.** (1) Notice that in Definition II.2.27, for  $i < \sigma$  and  $i$  a limit ordinal,  $M_i$  is a  $(\mu, i)$ -limit model.

(2) Notice that Condition (4) implies Condition (3) of Definition II.2.27.

**Definition II.2.29.** We say that  $M'$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -*limit* iff there is some  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  such that  $M'$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit over  $M$ .

**Notation II.2.30.** (1) For  $\mu$  a cardinal and  $\sigma$  a limit ordinal with  $\sigma < \mu^+$ , we write  $\mathcal{K}_\mu^\sigma$  for the collection of  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit models of  $\mathcal{K}$ .

(2) We define

$$\mathcal{K}_\mu^* := \{M \in \mathcal{K} \mid M \text{ is a } (\mu, \theta) \text{ -- limit model for some limit ordinal } \theta < \mu^+\}.$$

$\text{index} \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  as the *collection of limit models of*  $\mathcal{K}$ .

Limit models also exist in certain abstract elementary classes. By repeated applications of Fact II.2.25, the existence of  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit models can be proved:

**Fact II.2.31 (Theorem 1.3.1 from [ShVi]).** *Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal such that  $\mu < \lambda$ . For every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ , there exists  $M' \in \mathcal{K}$  such that  $M \prec_\mathcal{K} M'$  and  $M'$  is a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit over  $M$ .*

In order to extend this argument further to yield the existence of  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limits for arbitrary limit ordinals  $\sigma < \mu^+$ , we need to be able to verify that limit models are in fact amalgamation bases. We will examine this in Section II.4.

While the existence of limit models is relatively easy to derive from the categoricity and weak diamond assumptions, the uniqueness of limit models is more difficult. Here we recall two easy uniqueness facts which state that limit models of the same length are isomorphic. They are proved using the natural back-n-forth construction of an isomorphism.

**Fact II.2.32 (Fact 1.3.6 from [ShVi]).** *Let  $\mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\sigma < \mu^+$ . If  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  are  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limits over  $M$ , then there exists an isomorphism  $g : M_1 \rightarrow M_2$  such that  $g \upharpoonright M = id_M$ . Moreover if  $M_1$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit over  $M_0$ ;  $N_1$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit over  $N_0$  and  $g : M_0 \cong N_0$ , then there exists a  $\prec_\mathcal{K}$ -mapping,  $\hat{g}$ , extending  $g$  such that  $\hat{g} : M_1 \cong N_1$ .*

**Fact II.2.33 (Fact 1.3.7 from [ShVi]).** *Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal and  $\sigma$  a limit ordinal with  $\sigma < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ . If  $M$  is a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit model, then  $M$  is a  $(\mu, cf(\sigma))$ -limit model.*

A more challenging uniqueness question is to prove that two limit models of different lengths ( $\sigma_1 \neq \sigma_2$ ) are isomorphic (Conjecture II.1.2). The main result of this chapter, Theorem II.11.2, is a solution to this conjecture.

We will need one more notion of limit model, which will appear implicitly in the proofs of Theorem II.6.11, Theorem II.7.17, Theorem II.8.8 and Theorem II.9.7. This notion is a mild extension of the notion of limit models already defined:

**Definition II.2.34.** Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal  $< \lambda$ , we say that  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over  $M$  iff there exists a  $\prec_K$ -increasing and continuous chain of models  $\langle M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \mid i < \mu^+ \rangle$  satisfying

- (1)  $M_0 = M$
- (2)  $\bigcup_{i < \mu^+} M_i = \check{M}$
- (3) for  $i < \mu^+$ ,  $M_i$  is an amalgamation base and
- (4) for  $i < \mu^+$ ,  $M_{i+1}$  is universal over  $M_i$

**Remark II.2.35.** While it is known that  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit models are amalgamation bases when  $\theta < \mu^+$ , it is open whether or not  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limits are amalgamation bases. To avoid confusion between these two concepts of limit models, we will always denote  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models with a  $\check{\phantom{x}}$  above the model's name (ie.  $\check{M}$ ).

The existence of  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models follows from the fact that  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit models are amalgamation bases when  $\theta < \mu^+$ , see Corollary II.4.10. The uniqueness of  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models (Proposition II.2.36) can be shown using an easy back and forth construction as in the proof of Fact II.2.32.

**Proposition II.2.36.** *Suppose  $\check{M}_1$  and  $\check{M}_2$  are  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limits over  $M_1$  and  $M_2$ , respectively. If there exists an isomorphism  $h : M_1 \cong M_2$ , then  $h$  can be extended to an isomorphism  $g : \check{M}_1 \cong \check{M}_2$ .*

$(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models turn out to be useful as replacement for monster models. By Proposition II.2.36 and the following proposition,  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limits provide some level of homogeneity.

**Proposition II.2.37.** *If  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit, then for every  $N \prec_K \check{M}$  with  $N \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ , we have that  $\check{M}$  is universal over  $N$ . Moreover,  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over  $N$ .*



### II.3 Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski Models

Since  $\mathcal{K}$  has no maximal models,  $\mathcal{K}$  has models of cardinality  $\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ . Then by Fact II.3.1, we can construct Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski models.

**Fact II.3.1 (Claim 0.6 of [Sh 394] or see [Gr2]).** *Assume that  $\mathcal{K}$  is an AEC that contains a model of cardinality  $\geq \beth_{(2^{LS(\mathcal{K})})^+}$ . Then, there is a  $\Phi$ , proper for linear orders<sup>1</sup>, such that for linear orders  $I \subseteq J$  we have that*

(1)  $EM(I, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}) \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(J, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$  and

(2)  $\|EM(I, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})\| = |I| + LS(\mathcal{K})$ .

We describe an index set which appears often in work toward the categoricity conjecture. This index set appears in several places including [KoSh], [Sh 394] and [ShVi].

**Notation II.3.2.** Let  $\alpha < \lambda$  be given. We define

$$I_\alpha := \left\{ \eta \in {}^\omega \alpha : \{n < \omega \mid \eta[n] \neq 0\} \text{ is finite} \right\}$$

Associate with  $I_\alpha$  the lexicographical ordering  $\triangleleft$ . If  $X \subseteq \alpha$ , we write

$$I_X := \{\eta \in {}^\omega X : \{n < \omega \mid \eta[n] \neq 0\} \text{ is finite}\}.$$

The following fact is proved in several papers e.g. [ShVi].

**Fact II.3.3.** *If  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(I_\lambda, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$  is a model of cardinality  $\mu^+$  with  $\mu^+ < \lambda$ , then there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f : M \rightarrow EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$ .*

---

<sup>1</sup>Also known as a blueprint, see Chapter VII, §5 of [Shc].

A variant of this universality property is (implicit in Lemma 3.7 of [KoSh]):

**Fact II.3.4.** *Suppose  $\kappa$  is a regular cardinal. If  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(I_{\kappa}, \Phi) \restriction L(\mathcal{K})$  is a model of cardinality  $< \kappa$  and  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(I_{\lambda}, \Phi) \restriction L(\mathcal{K})$  is an extension of  $M$  of cardinality  $\|M\|$ , then there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding  $f : N \rightarrow EM(I_{\kappa}, \Phi) \restriction L(\mathcal{K})$  such that  $f \restriction M = id_M$ .*

## II.4 Amalgamation Bases

Since the amalgamation property for abstract elementary classes is inherent in the definition of types, most work towards understanding AECs has been for classes where the amalgamation property is known to hold. In [ShVi], Shelah and Villaveces begin to tackle the categoricity problem with an approach that does not require the amalgamation property as an assumption. Shelah and Villaveces, however, prove a weak amalgamation property, which they refer to as *density of amalgamation bases*, summarized here:

**Fact II.4.1 (Theorem 1.2.4 from [ShVi]).** *For every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{<\lambda}$ , there exists  $N \in \mathcal{K}_{\|M\|}^{am}$  with  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$ .*

We can now improve Fact II.2.25 slightly. This improvement is used throughout this paper.

**Lemma II.4.2.** *For every  $\mu$  with  $LS(\mathcal{K}) < \mu < \lambda$ , if  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$ ,  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\bar{a} \in {}^{\mu^+}\mathcal{N}$  are such that  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$ , then there exists  $M^{\bar{a}} \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$  such that  $M^{\bar{a}}$  is universal over  $M$  and  $M \cup \bar{a} \subseteq M^{\bar{a}}$ .*

*Proof.* By Axiom 6 of AEC, we can find  $M' \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  of cardinality  $\mu$  containing  $M \cup \bar{a}$ . Applying Fact II.4.1, there exists an amalgamation base of cardinality  $\mu$ , say  $M''$ ,

extending  $M'$ . By Fact II.2.25 we can find a universal extension of  $M''$  of cardinality  $\mu$ , say  $M^{\bar{a}}$ .

Notice that  $M^{\bar{a}}$  is also universal over  $M$ . Why? Suppose  $M^*$  is an extension of  $M$  of cardinality  $\mu$ . Since  $M$  is an amalgamation base we can amalgamate  $M''$  and  $M^*$  over  $M$ . WLOG we may assume that the amalgam,  $M^{**}$ , is an extension of  $M''$  of cardinality  $\mu$  and  $f^* : M^* \rightarrow M^{**}$  with  $f^* \upharpoonright M = id_M$ .

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
 M^* & \xrightarrow{\quad} & M^{**} & & \\
 \uparrow id & & \uparrow id & \searrow g & \\
 M & \xrightarrow{\quad} & M'' & \xrightarrow{id} & M^{\bar{a}}
 \end{array}$$

Now, since  $M^{\bar{a}}$  is universal over  $M''$ , there exists a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $g$  such that  $g : M^{**} \rightarrow M^{\bar{a}}$  with  $g \upharpoonright M'' = id_{M''}$ . Notice that  $g \circ f^*$  gives us the desired mapping of  $M^*$  into  $M^{\bar{a}}$ .

⊢

While Fact II.4.1 asserts the existence of amalgamation bases, it is unknown (in this context) what characterizes amalgamation bases. Shelah and Villaveces have claimed that every limit model is an amalgamation base (Fact 1.3.10 of [ShVi]), using  $\diamond_{\mu^+}(S_{cf(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$ . We provide a proof that every  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit model with  $\theta < \mu^+$  is an amalgamation base under a slightly weaker version of diamond ( $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_{cf(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$ ):

**Theorem II.4.3.** *Under Assumption II.1.1, if  $M$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit for some  $\theta$  with  $\theta < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ , then  $M$  is an amalgamation base.*

Let us first recall some set theoretic definitions and facts concerning the weak diamond.

**Definition II.4.4.** Let  $\theta$  be a regular ordinal  $< \mu^+$ . We denote

$$S_\theta^{\mu^+} := \{\alpha < \mu^+ \mid \text{cf}(\alpha) = \theta\}.$$

**Definition II.4.5.** For  $\mu$  a cardinal and  $S \subseteq \mu^+$  a stationary set,  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S)$  is said to hold iff for all  $F : \lambda^{+>2} \rightarrow 2$  there exists  $g : \lambda^+ \rightarrow 2$  so that for every  $f : \lambda^+ \rightarrow 2$  the set

$$\{\delta \in S \mid F(f \restriction \delta) = g(\delta)\} \text{ is stationary.}$$

We will be using a consequence of  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S)$ , called  $\Theta_{\mu^+}(S)$  (see [Gr2]).

**Definition II.4.6.** For  $\mu$  a cardinal  $S \subseteq \mu^+$  a stationary set,  $\Theta_{\mu^+}(S)$  is said to hold if and only if for all families of functions

$$\{f_\eta : \eta \in {}^{\mu^+}2 \text{ where } f_\eta : \mu^+ \rightarrow \mu^+\}$$

and for every club  $C \subseteq \mu^+$ , there exist  $\eta \neq \nu \in {}^{\mu^+}2$  and there exists a  $\delta \in C \cap S$  such that

$$(1) \ \eta \restriction \delta = \nu \restriction \delta,$$

$$(2) \ f_\eta \restriction \delta = f_\nu \restriction \delta \text{ and}$$

$$(3) \ \eta[\delta] \neq \nu[\delta].$$

It is not hard to see the relative strength of these principles. See [Gr2] for details.

**Fact II.4.7.**  $\diamond_{\mu^+}(S) \implies \Phi_{\mu^+}(S) \implies \Theta_{\mu^+}(S)$  for all stationary  $S \subseteq \mu^+$ .

For most regular  $\theta < \mu^+$ , we have that  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_\theta^{\mu^+})$  follows from GCH:

**Fact II.4.8 ([Gy] for  $\mu$  regular and [Sh 108] for  $\mu$  singular).** For every  $\mu > \aleph_1$ ,  $GCH \implies \diamond_{\mu^+}(S)$  where  $S = S_\theta^{\mu^+}$  for every regular  $\theta \neq \text{cf}(\mu)$ .

Thus, from  $GCH$  and  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_{\text{cf}(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$  we have for every regular  $\theta < \mu^+$ ,  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_\theta^{\mu^+})$  holds.

Before we begin the proof of Theorem II.4.3, notice that:

**Remark II.4.9 (Invariance).** By Axiom 1 of AEC, if  $M$  is an amalgamation base and  $f$  is an  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding, then  $f(M)$  is an amalgamation base.

*Proof of Theorem II.4.3.* Given  $\mu$ , suppose that  $\theta$  is the minimal infinite ordinal  $< \mu^+$  such that there exists a model  $M$  which is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit and not an amalgamation base. Notice that by Fact II.2.33, we may assume that  $\text{cf}(\theta) = \theta$ .

Now we define by induction on the length of  $\eta \in {}^{\mu^+}>2$  a tree of structures,  $\langle M_\eta \mid \eta \in {}^{\mu^+}>2 \rangle$ , satisfying:

- (1) for  $\eta \triangleleft \nu \in {}^{\mu^+}>2$ ,  $M_\eta \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_\nu$
- (2) for  $l(\eta)$  a limit ordinal with  $\text{cf}(l(\eta)) \leq \theta$ ,  $M_\eta = \bigcup_{\alpha < l(\eta)} M_{\eta \restriction \alpha}$
- (3) for  $\eta \in {}^\alpha 2$  with  $\alpha \in S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ ,
  - (a)  $M_\eta$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit model
  - (b)  $M_{\eta \restriction 0}, M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  cannot be amalgamated over  $M_\eta$
  - (c)  $M_{\eta \restriction 0}$  and  $M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  are amalgamation bases of cardinality  $\mu$
- (4) for  $\eta \in {}^\alpha 2$  with  $\alpha \notin S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ ,
  - (a)  $M_\eta$  is an amalgamation base
  - (b)  $M_{\eta \restriction 0}, M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  are universal over  $M_\eta$  and
  - (c)  $M_{\eta \restriction 0}$  and  $M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  are amalgamation bases of cardinality  $\mu$  (it may be that  $M_{\eta \restriction 0} = M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  in this case).

This construction is possible:

$\eta = \langle \rangle$ : By Fact II.4.1, we can find  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  such that  $M \prec_\mathcal{K} M'$ . Define  $M_\emptyset := M'$ .

$l(\eta)$  is a limit ordinal: When  $\text{cf}(l(\eta)) > \theta$ , let  $M'_\eta := \bigcup_{\alpha < l(\eta)} M_{\eta \restriction \alpha}$ .  $M'_\eta$  is not necessarily an amalgamation base, but for the purposes of this construction, continuity at such limits is not important. Thus we can find an extension of  $M'_\eta$ , say  $M_\eta$ , of cardinality  $\mu$  where  $M_\eta$  is an amalgamation base.

For  $\eta$  with  $\text{cf}(l(\eta)) \leq \theta$ , we require continuity. Define  $M_\eta := \bigcup_{\alpha < l(\eta)} M_{\eta \restriction \alpha}$ . We need to verify that if  $l(\eta) \notin S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ , then  $M_\eta$  is an amalgamation base. In fact, we will show that such a  $M_\eta$  will be a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(l(\eta)))$ -limit model. Let  $\langle \alpha_i \mid i < \text{cf}(l(\eta)) \rangle$  be an increasing and continuous sequence of ordinals converging to  $l(\eta)$  such that  $\text{cf}(\alpha_i) < \theta$  for every  $i < \text{cf}(l(\eta))$ . Condition (4b) guarantees that for  $i < \text{cf}(l(\eta))$ ,  $M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_{i+1}}$  is universal over  $M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_i}$ . Additionally, condition (2) ensures us that  $\langle M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_i} \mid i < \text{cf}(l(\eta)) \rangle$  is continuous. This sequence of models witnesses that  $M_\eta$  is a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(l(\eta)))$ -limit model. By our minimal choice of  $\theta$ , we have that  $(\mu, \text{cf}(l(\eta)))$ -limit models are amalgamation bases.

$\eta \hat{=} i$  where  $l(\eta) \in S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ : We first notice that  $M_\eta := \bigcup_{\alpha < l(\eta)} M_{\eta \restriction \alpha}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit model. Why? Since  $l(\eta) \in S_\theta^{\mu^+}$  and  $\theta$  is regular, we can find an increasing and continuous sequence of ordinals,  $\langle \alpha_i \mid i < \theta \rangle$  converging to  $l(\eta)$  such that for each  $i < \theta$  we have that  $\text{cf}(\alpha_i) < \theta$ . Condition (4b) of the construction guarantees that for each  $i < \theta$ ,  $M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_{i+1}}$  is universal over  $M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_i}$ . Thus  $\langle M_{\eta \restriction \alpha_i} \mid i < \theta \rangle$  witnesses that  $M_\eta$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit model.

Since  $M_\eta$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit, we can fix an isomorphism  $f : M \cong M_\eta$ . By Remark II.4.9,  $M_\eta$  is not an amalgamation base. Thus there exist  $M_{\eta \restriction 0}$  and  $M_{\eta \restriction 1}$  extensions of  $M_\eta$  which cannot be amalgamated over  $M_\eta$ . WLOG, by the Density of Amalgamation

Bases, we can choose  $M_{\eta \smallfrown 0}$  and  $M_{\eta \smallfrown 1}$  to be elements of  $\mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ .

$\eta \smallfrown i$  where  $l(\eta) \notin S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ : Since  $M_\eta$  is an amalgamation base, we can choose  $M_{\eta \smallfrown 0}$  and  $M_{\eta \smallfrown 1}$  to be extensions of  $M_\eta$  such that  $M_{\eta \smallfrown l} \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  and  $M_{\eta \smallfrown l}$  is universal over  $M_\eta$ , for  $l = 0, 1$ .

This completes the construction. For every  $\eta \in {}^{\mu^+}2$ , define  $M_\eta := \bigcup_{\alpha < \mu^+} M_{\eta \smallfrown \alpha}$ . By categoricity in  $\lambda$  and Fact II.3.3, we can fix a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $g_\eta : M_\eta \rightarrow EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \restriction L(\mathcal{K})$  for each  $\eta \in {}^{\mu^+}2$ . Now apply  $\Theta_{\mu^+}(S_\theta^{\mu^+})$  to find  $\eta, \nu \in {}^{\mu^+}2$  and  $\alpha \in S_\theta^{\mu^+}$  such that

- $\rho := \eta \restriction \alpha = \nu \restriction \alpha$ ,
- $\eta[\alpha] = 0, \nu[\alpha] = 1$  and
- $g_\eta \restriction M_\rho = g_\nu \restriction M_\rho$ .

By Axiom 6 (the Löwenheim-Skolem property) of AEC, there exists  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \restriction L(\mathcal{K})$  of cardinality  $\mu$  such that the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccc} M_{\rho \smallfrown 1} & \xrightarrow{g_\nu \restriction M_{\rho \smallfrown 1}} & N \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow g_\eta \restriction M_{\rho \smallfrown 0} \\ M_\rho & \xrightarrow{id} & M_{\rho \smallfrown 0} \end{array}$$

Notice that  $g_\eta \restriction M_{\rho \smallfrown 0}, g_\nu \restriction M_{\rho \smallfrown 1}$  and  $N$  witness that  $M_{\rho \smallfrown 0}$  and  $M_{\rho \smallfrown 1}$  can be amalgamated over  $M_\rho$ . Since  $l(\rho) = \alpha \in S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ , we contradict condition (3b) of the construction.

⊥

**Corollary II.4.10 (Existence of limit models and  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models).** *For every cardinal  $\mu$  and limit ordinal  $\theta$  with  $\theta \leq \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ , if  $M$  is an amalgamation base of cardinality  $\mu$ , then there exists  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  which is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit over  $M$ .*

*Proof.* By repeated applications of Fact II.2.25 (existence of universal extensions) and Theorem II.4.3. ⊢

## II.5 Weak Disjoint Amalgamation

Shelah and Villaveces prove a version of weak disjoint amalgamation in an attempt to prove an extension property for towers. We will be using weak disjoint amalgamation to build extensions of towers. The following proof was suggested by John Baldwin.

**Fact II.5.1 (Weak Disjoint Amalgamation [ShVi]).** *Given  $\lambda > \mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\alpha, \theta_0 < \mu^+$  with  $\theta_0$  regular. If  $M_0$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_0)$ -limit and  $M_1, M_2 \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  are  $\prec_\mathcal{K}$ -extensions of  $M_0$ , then for every  $\bar{b} \in {}^\alpha(M_1 \setminus M_0)$ , there exist  $M_3$ , a model, and  $h$ , a  $\prec_\mathcal{K}$ -embedding, such that*

$$(1) \ h : M_2 \rightarrow M_3;$$

$$(2) \ h \upharpoonright M_0 = id_{M_0} \text{ and}$$

$$(3) \ h(M_2) \cap \bar{b} = \emptyset \text{ (equivalently } h(M_2) \cap M_1 = M_0 \text{)}.$$

*Proof.* Let  $M_0, M_1, M_2$  and  $\bar{b}$  be given as in the statement of the claim. First notice that we may assume that  $M_0, M_1, M_2$  and  $\bar{b}$  are such that there is a  $\delta < \mu^+$  with  $M_0 = M_1 \cap (EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}))$  and  $M_1, M_2 \prec_\mathcal{K} EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$ . Why? Define  $\langle N_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \mid i < \mu^+ \rangle$  a  $\prec_\mathcal{K}$ -increasing and continuous chain of amalgamation bases such that

$$(1) \ N_0 = M_0 \text{ and}$$

$$(2) \ N_{i+1} \text{ is universal over } N_i.$$



Let  $N_{\mu^+} = \bigcup_{i < \mu^+} N_i$ . By categoricity and Fact II.3.3, there exists a  $\mathcal{K}$ -mapping  $f$  such that  $f : N_{\mu^+} \rightarrow EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$ . Consider the club  $C = \{\delta < \mu^+ \mid f(N_{\mu^+}) \cap (EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})) = f(N_\delta)\}$ . Let  $\delta \in C \cap S_{\text{cf}(\theta_0)}^{\mu^+}$ . Notice that  $f(N_\delta)$  is a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(\theta_0))$ -limit model. Since  $M_0$  is also a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(\theta_0))$ -limit model, there exists  $g : M_0 \cong f(N_\delta)$ . Since  $f(N_{\delta+1})$  is universal over  $f(N_\delta)$ , we can extend  $g$  to  $g'$  such that  $g' : M_1 \rightarrow f(N_{\delta+1})$  with  $g'(M_1) \cap EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}) = g'(M_0)$ . Thus we may take  $M_0, M_1, M_2$  and  $\bar{b}$  as stated.

Let  $\delta$  be such that  $M_1 \cap (EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})) = M_0$  and let  $\delta^* < \mu^+$  be such that  $M_1, M_2 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} EM(I_{\delta^*}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$ . Let  $h$  be the  $\mathcal{K}$  mapping from  $EM(I_{\delta^*}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$  into  $EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$  induced by

$$\alpha \mapsto \delta^* + \alpha$$

for all  $\alpha < \delta^*$ .

We will show that if  $b \in M_1 \setminus M_0$  then  $b \notin h(M_2)$ . Suppose for the sake of contradiction that  $b \in M_1 \setminus M_0$  and  $b \in h(M_2)$ . Let  $\tau$  be a Skolem term and let  $\bar{\alpha}, \bar{\beta}$  be finite sequences such that  $\bar{\alpha} \in I_\delta$  and  $\bar{\beta} \in I_{\delta^*} \setminus I_\delta$ , satisfying  $b = \tau(\bar{\alpha}, \bar{\beta})$ .

Since  $b \in h(M_2)$ , there exists a Skolem term  $\sigma$  and finite sequences  $\bar{\alpha}' \in I_\delta$  and  $\bar{\beta}' \in I_{\mu^+} \setminus I_{\delta^*}$  satisfying  $b = \sigma(\bar{\alpha}', \bar{\beta}')$ .

Since  $\bar{\beta}'$  and  $\bar{\beta}$  are disjoint, we can find  $\bar{\gamma}'$  and  $\bar{\gamma} \in I_\delta$  such that the type of  $\bar{\beta}' \hat{\ } \bar{\beta}$  is the same as the type of  $\bar{\gamma}' \hat{\ } \bar{\gamma}$  over  $\bar{\alpha}' \hat{\ } \bar{\alpha}$  with respect to the lexicographical order of  $I_{\mu^+}$ . Notice then that the type of  $\bar{\beta}'$  and  $\bar{\gamma}'$  over  $\bar{\gamma} \hat{\ } \bar{\alpha}' \hat{\ } \bar{\alpha}$  are the same with respect to the lexicographical ordering.

Recall

$$EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}) \models b = \tau(\alpha, \beta) = \sigma(\alpha', \beta').$$

Thus

$$EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}) \models \tau(\alpha, \gamma) = \sigma(\alpha', \gamma').$$

Since  $\gamma'$  and  $\beta'$  look the same over  $\gamma \hat{\alpha}' \hat{\alpha}$ , we also have

$$EM(I_{\mu^+}, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}) \models \tau(\alpha, \gamma) = \sigma(\alpha', \beta').$$

Combining the implications gives us a representation of  $b$  with parameters from  $I_\delta$ . Thus  $b \in EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K})$ . Since  $M_0 = M_1 \cap (EM(I_\delta, \Phi) \upharpoonright L(\mathcal{K}))$ , we get that  $b \in M_0$  which contradicts our choice of  $b$ .

Let us state an easy corollary of Fact II.5.1 that will simplify future constructions:

**Corollary II.5.2.** *Suppose  $\mu$ ,  $M_0$ ,  $M_1$ ,  $M_2$  and  $\bar{b}$  are as in the statement of Fact*

*II.5.1. If  $\check{M}$  is universal over  $M_1$ , then there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $h$  such that*

$$(1) \ h : M_2 \rightarrow \check{M},$$

$$(2) \ h \upharpoonright M_0 = id_{M_0} \text{ and}$$

$$(3) \ h(M_2) \cap \bar{b} = M_0 \text{ (equivalently } h(M_2) \cap M_1 = \emptyset).$$

*Proof.* By Fact II.5.1, there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $g$  and a model  $M_3$  of cardinality  $\mu$  such that

$$\cdot \ g : M_2 \rightarrow M_3$$

$$\cdot \ g \upharpoonright M_0 = id_{M_0}$$

$$\cdot \ g(M_2) \cap \bar{b} = M_0 \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot \ M_1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_3.$$

Since  $\check{M}$  is universal over  $M_1$ , we can fix a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f$  such that

$$\cdot \ f : M_3 \rightarrow \check{M} \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot \ f \upharpoonright M_1 = id_{M_1}$$

Notice that  $h := g \circ f$  is the desired mapping from  $M_2$  into  $\tilde{M}$ .

⊣

## II.6 $<_{\mu,\alpha}^b$ -Extension Property for $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$

Shelah introduced chains of towers in [Sh 48] and [Sh 87b] as a tool to build a model of cardinality  $\mu^+$  from models of cardinality  $\mu$ . Here we will use the towers to prove the uniqueness of limit models by producing a model which is simultaneously a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model and a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model. The construction of such a model is sufficient to prove the uniqueness of limit models by Fact II.2.32.

The proof of Theorem II.11.2 uses scattered towers, defined in Definition II.8.2. The proof of the extension property for this class of towers is quite technical. For expository reasons, we introduce weaker notions of towers and prove the extension property for these towers in Sections II.6 and II.7. Understanding the  $<_{\mu,\alpha}^b$  and  $<_{\mu,\alpha}^c$ -extension properties will make the proof of Theorem II.8.8 (the extension property for scattered towers) more approachable.

**Definition II.6.1 (Towers Definition 3.1.1 of [ShVi]).** Let  $\mu > LS(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\alpha, \theta < \mu^+$

(1)

$$\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha} := \left\{ (\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \left| \begin{array}{l} (\bar{M}, \bar{a}) := (\langle M_\gamma \mid \gamma < \alpha \rangle, \langle a_\gamma \mid \gamma < \alpha \rangle); \\ \bar{M} \text{ is } \prec_{\mathcal{K}}\text{-increasing}; \\ \text{for every } \gamma < \alpha, a_\gamma \in M_{\gamma+1} \setminus M_\gamma; \\ \text{for every } \gamma < \alpha, M_\gamma \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \end{array} \right. \right\}$$

(2)  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^\theta := \{(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha} \mid \text{for every } \gamma < \alpha, M_\gamma \text{ is a } (\mu, \theta)\text{-limit}\}$

(3)

$$\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^* = \left\{ (\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha} \left| \begin{array}{l} \text{for every } \gamma < \alpha, \text{ there exists a limit ordinal } \theta_\gamma < \mu^+ \\ \text{such that } M_\gamma \text{ is a } (\mu, \theta_\gamma)\text{-limit model.} \end{array} \right. \right\}$$

**Fact II.6.2 (Fact 3.1.7 from [ShVi]).** *Suppose  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\lambda$ . Given  $\lambda > \mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$ ,  $\alpha < \mu^+$  and  $\theta$  a regular cardinal with  $\theta < \mu^+$ , we have that  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^\theta \neq \emptyset$ .*

Roughly speaking, in order to prove the uniqueness of limit models, we will construct an array of models of width  $\theta_1$  and height  $\theta_2$  in such a way that the union will simultaneously be a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model and a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model. Each row in our array will be a tower from  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\theta_1}^*$ . We define the array by induction on the height  $(\theta_2)$  by finding an "increasing" and continuous chain of towers from  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\theta_1}^*$ . We need to make explicit what we mean by "increasing." One property that the ordering on towers should have is that the union of an "increasing" chain of towers from  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\theta_1}^*$  should also be a member of  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\theta_1}^*$ . In particular we need to guarantee that the models that appear in the union be limit models. This motivates the following ordering on towers:

**Definition II.6.3 (Definition 3.1.3 of [ShVi]).** For  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}), (\bar{N}, \bar{b}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$  we say that

(1)  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \leq_{\mu,\alpha}^b (\bar{N}, \bar{b})$  if and only if

(a)  $\bar{a} = \bar{b}$ ;

(b) for every  $\gamma < \alpha$ ,  $M_\gamma \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} N_\gamma$  and

(c) whenever  $M_\gamma \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_\gamma$ , then  $N_\gamma$  is universal over  $M_\gamma$ .

(2)  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) <_{\mu,\alpha}^b (\bar{N}, \bar{b})$  if and only if  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \leq_{\mu,\alpha}^b (\bar{N}, \bar{b})$  and for every  $\gamma < \alpha$ ,

$M_\gamma \neq N_\gamma$ .

**Notation II.6.4.** If  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a})^\sigma \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^* \mid \sigma < \gamma \rangle$  is a  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -increasing and continuous chain with  $\gamma < \mu^+$ , we let  $\bigcup_{\sigma < \gamma} (\bar{M}, \bar{a})^\sigma$  denote the tower  $(\bar{M}^\gamma, \bar{a})$  where  $\bar{M}^\gamma = \langle \bigcup_{\sigma < \gamma} M_i^\sigma \mid i < \alpha \rangle$ .

**Remark II.6.5.** If  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a})^\sigma \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^* \mid \sigma < \gamma \rangle$  is a  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -increasing and continuous chain with  $\gamma < \mu^+$ , then  $\bigcup_{\sigma < \gamma} (\bar{M}, \bar{a})^\sigma \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ . Why? Notice that for each  $i < \alpha$ ,  $M_i^\gamma := \bigcup_{\sigma < \gamma} M_i^\sigma$  is a limit model, witnessed by  $\langle M_i^\sigma \mid \sigma < \gamma \rangle$ .

**Notation II.6.6.** We will often be looking at extensions of an initial segment of a tower. We introduce the following notation for this. Suppose  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ . Let  $\beta < \alpha$ . We write  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \upharpoonright \beta$  for the tower  $(\langle M_i \mid i < \beta \rangle, \langle a_i \mid i < \beta \rangle) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \beta}^*$ . We also abbreviate  $\langle M_i \mid i < \beta \rangle$  by  $\bar{M} \upharpoonright \beta$  and  $\langle a_i \mid i < \beta \rangle$  by  $\bar{a} \upharpoonright \beta$ .

In order to construct a non-trivial chain of towers, we need to be able to take proper  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extensions.

**Definition II.6.7.** We say the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property holds iff for every  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  there exists  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) <_{\mu, \alpha}^b (\bar{M}', \bar{a})$ .

**Remark II.6.8.** Shelah and Villaveces claim the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property as Fact 3.19(1) in [ShVi]. Their proof does not converge. As of the Fall of 2001, they were unable to produce a proof of this claim.

We introduce a subclass of  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  (nice towers) and prove the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property for these towers. With new proofs in Sections II.9 and II.10, the limited extension property (for scattered towers) turns out to be sufficient to prove the uniqueness of limit models.

**Definition II.6.9.**  $(\langle M_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  is *nice* provided that for every limit ordinal  $i < \alpha$ , we have that  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j$  is an amalgamation base.

**Remark II.6.10.** If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  is continuous, then  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  is nice.

Notice that in the definition of towers, we do not require continuity at limit ordinals  $i$  of the sequence of models. This allows for towers in which  $M_i \neq \bigcup_{j < i} M_j$ . We cannot guarantee that a tower discontinuous at  $i$  is nice since the union of limit models  $(\bigcup_{j < i} M_j)$  may not be an amalgamation base.

Moreover, the union of a  $<^b$ -increasing chain of  $< \mu^+$  nice towers, is not necessarily nice. Suppose  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a})^\beta \mid \beta < \gamma \rangle$  is a  $<^b_{\mu, \alpha}$ -increasing and continuous chain of nice towers each discontinuous at  $i$ . Then  $\bigcup_{\beta < \gamma} \bigcup_{j < i} M_j^\beta$  may not be an amalgamation base. All we know is that  $\bigcup_{\beta < \gamma} \bigcup_{j < i} M_j^\beta$  is a union of limit models.

**Theorem II.6.11 (The  $<^b_{\mu, \alpha}$ -extension property for nice towers).** *For every nice tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ , there exists a nice tower  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) <^b_{\mu, \alpha} (\bar{M}', \bar{a})$ . Moreover, if  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is an amalgamation base and  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ , for some  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit,  $\check{M}$ , then we can find a nice extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a})$  such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .*

It is natural to attempt to define  $\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  to form an extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a})$  of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  by induction on  $i < \alpha$  (as Shelah and Villaveces suggest). Fact II.5.1 makes the base case possible. The limits could be taken care of by taking unions. The problem arises in the successor step. We would have defined  $M'_i$  extending  $M_i$  such that  $M'_i \cap \{a_j \mid i \leq j < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ . Fact II.5.1 is too weak to find an extension of both  $M'_i$  and  $M_{i+1}$  which avoids  $\{a_j \mid i+1 \leq j < \alpha\}$ . We can only find  $M'_{i+1}$  which contains an image of  $M'_i$  and  $M_{i+1}$  and avoids  $\{a_j \mid i+1 \leq j < \alpha\}$  by applying Fact II.5.1 to  $M_{i+1}$ , some extension of  $M_{i+1} \cup M'_i$ ,  $M_\alpha$  and  $\{a_j \mid i+1 \leq j < \alpha\}$ .

Alternatively, one might try defining approximations  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}')^i \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, i}^*$  a  $<^b_{\mu, i}$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  by induction. In this construction, we have no problem with the successor stages (because we do not require the approximations to be increas-

ing). However, we will get stuck at the limit stages, because we can no longer take unions.

Since Fact II.5.1 gives us a mapping from  $M'_i$  to  $M'_{i+1}$  we have decided to look at a directed system of models  $(\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \langle f'_{i,j} \mid i \leq j < \alpha \rangle)$ .

Before beginning the proof of Theorem II.6.11, we prove the following lemma which will be used in the successor stage of the construction.

**Lemma II.6.12.** *Suppose  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  lies inside a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model,  $\check{M}$ , that is  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . If  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}') \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, j+1}^*$  for some  $j+1 < \alpha$  is a partial extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  (ie  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \upharpoonright (j+1) <_{\mu, j+1}^b (\bar{M}', \bar{a}')$ ) and  $\bigcup_{i < j+1} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ , then there exists a  $\mathcal{K}$ -mapping  $f' : M'_j \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $f' \upharpoonright M_j = \text{id}_{M_j}$  and there exists  $M'_{j+1} \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^*$  with  $M'_{j+1} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  so that  $(\langle f'(M'_i) \mid i \leq j \rangle \wedge \langle M'_{j+1} \rangle, \bar{a} \upharpoonright (j+1))$  is a partial  $<_{\mu, j+1}^b$  extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$ .*

*Proof.* Since  $M'_j$  and  $M_{j+1}$  are both  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -substructures of  $\check{M}$ , we can get  $M''_{j+1}$  (a first approximation to the desired  $M'_{j+1}$ ) such that  $M''_{j+1} \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^*$  is universal over  $M'_j$  and universal over  $M_{j+1}$ . How? By the Downward Löwenheim Skolem Axiom (Axiom 6) of AEC and the density of amalgamation bases (Fact II.4.1), we can find an amalgamation base  $L$  of cardinality  $\mu$  such that  $M'_j, M_{j+1} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} L$ . By Fact II.2.25 and Corollary II.4.10, there exists  $M''_{j+1}$ , a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit over  $L$ .

**Subclaim II.6.13.**  *$M''_{j+1}$  is universal over  $M'_j$  and is universal over  $M_{j+1}$ .*

*Proof.* It suffices to show that when  $L_0 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} L_1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} L$  are amalgamation bases of cardinality  $\mu$ , if  $L$  is universal over  $L_1$ , then  $L$  is universal over  $L_0$ . Let  $L'$  be an extension of  $L_0$  of cardinality  $\mu$ . Since  $L_0$  is an amalgamation base, we can find an

amalgam  $L''$  such that the following diagram commutes:

$$\begin{array}{ccccc}
 L' & \xrightarrow{h} & L'' & & \\
 \uparrow id & & \uparrow id & \searrow g & \\
 L_0 & \xrightarrow{id} & L_1 & \xrightarrow{id} & L
 \end{array}$$

Since  $L$  is universal over  $L_1$ , there exists  $g : L'' \rightarrow L$  with  $g \upharpoonright L_1 = id_{L_1}$ . Notice that  $g \circ h : L' \rightarrow L$  with  $g \circ h \upharpoonright L_0 = id_{L_0}$ .  $\dashv$

$M''_{j+1}$  may serve us well if it does not contain any  $a_l$  for  $j+1 \leq l < \alpha$ , but this is not guaranteed. So we need to make an adjustment. Notice that  $\check{M}$  is universal over  $M_{j+1}$ . Thus we can apply Corollary II.5.2 to  $M_{j+1}$ ,  $M_\alpha$ ,  $M''_{j+1}$  and  $\langle a_l \mid j+1 \leq l < \alpha \rangle$ . This yields a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $f'$  such that

- $f' : M''_{j+1} \rightarrow \check{M}$
- $f' \upharpoonright M_{j+1} = id_{M_{j+1}}$  and
- $f'(M''_{j+1}) \cap \{a_l \mid j+1 \leq l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ .

Set  $M'_{j+1} := f'(M''_{j+1})$ .  $\dashv$

*Proof of Theorem II.6.11.* Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal and  $\alpha$  a limit ordinal such that  $\alpha < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ . Let a nice tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  be given. Denote by  $M_\alpha$  a model in  $\mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  extending  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$ . As discussed above, we have decided to look at a directed system of models  $(\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \langle f'_{i,j} \mid i \leq j < \alpha \rangle)$ , as opposed to an increasing sequence, such that at each stage  $i \leq \alpha$ :

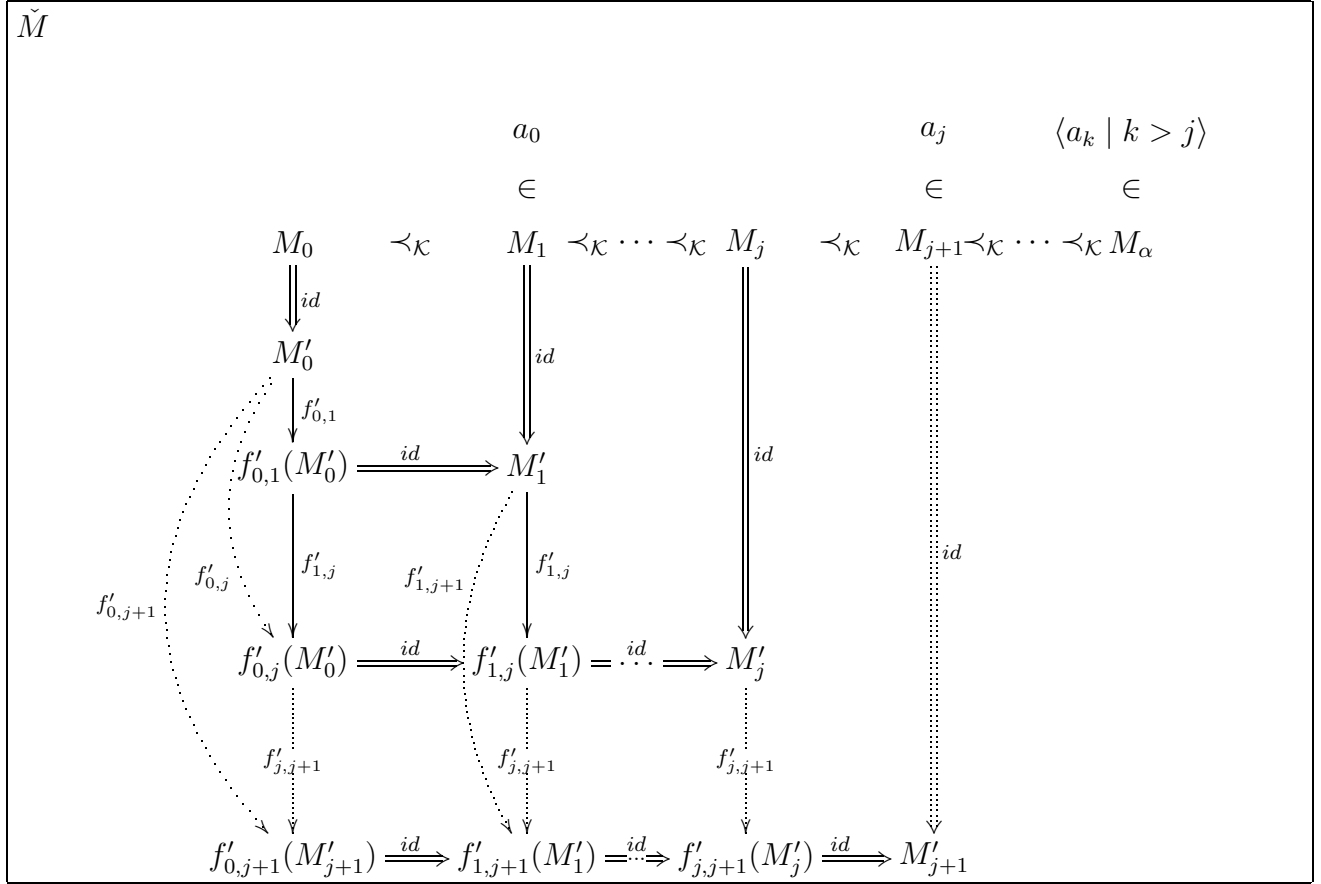
- (1)  $(\langle f'_{j,i}(M'_j) \mid j \leq i \rangle, \bar{a} \upharpoonright i)$  is a  $<_{\mu,i}^b$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \upharpoonright i$
- (2)  $M'_i$  is universal over  $M_i$ ,
- (3)  $M'_{i+1}$  is universal over  $f'_{i,i+1}(M'_i)$  and



$$(4) f'_{j,i} \upharpoonright M_j = id_{M_j},$$

It may be useful at this point to refer to Section II.2 concerning directed systems and direct limits. In order to carry out the construction at limit stages, we need to work inside of a fixed structure. Fix  $\check{M}$  to be a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model over  $M_\alpha$ .

Below is a diagram of the successor stage of the construction.



We will simultaneously define a directed system  $(\langle \check{M}_i \mid i \leq \alpha \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{i,j} \mid i \leq j < \alpha \rangle)$  extending  $(\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \langle f'_{i,j} \mid i < j < \alpha \rangle)$  such that:

$$(5) (\langle \check{M}_j = \check{M} \mid j < i \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle) \text{ forms a directed system,}$$

$$(6) M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M} \text{ and}$$

$$(7) f'_{j,i} \text{ can be extended to an automorphism of } \check{M}, \check{f}_{j,i}, \text{ for } j \leq i.$$

Notice that the  $M'_i$ 's will not necessarily form an extension of the tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$ . Rather, for each  $i < \alpha$ , we find some image of  $\langle M'_j \mid j < i \rangle$  which will extend the initial segment of length  $i$  of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$  (see condition (1) of the construction).

The construction is possible:

$i = 0$ : Since  $M_0$  is an amalgamation base, we can find  $M''_0 \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  (a first approximation of the desired  $M'_0$ ) such that  $M''_0$  is universal over  $M_0$ . By Corollary II.5.2 (applied to  $M_0, M_\alpha, M''_0$  and  $\bar{a}$ ), we can find a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $h : M''_0 \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $h \upharpoonright M_0 = id_{M_0}$  and  $h(M''_0) \cap \bar{a} = \emptyset$ . Set  $M'_0 := h(M''_0)$ ,  $f'_{0,0} := id_{M'_0}$  and  $\check{f}_{0,0} := id_{\check{M}}$ .

$i = j + 1$ : Fix  $M'_{j+1}$  and  $f$  as in Lemma II.6.12. Set  $f'_{j+1,j+1} = id_{M'_{j+1}}$ ,  $\check{f}_{j+1,j+1} = id_{\check{M}}$  and  $f'_{j,j+1} := f \upharpoonright M'_j$ . Since  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over both  $M'_j$  and  $f'_{j,j+1}(M'_j)$ , by Proposition II.2.36 we can extend  $f'_{j,j+1}$  to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ , denoted by  $\check{f}_{j,j+1}$ .

To guarantee that we have a directed system, for  $k < j$ , define  $f'_{k,j+1} := f'_{j,j+1} \circ f'_{k,j}$  and  $\check{f}_{k,j+1} := \check{f}_{j,j+1} \circ \check{f}_{k,j}$ .

$i$  is a limit ordinal: Suppose that  $(\langle M'_j \mid j < i \rangle, \langle f'_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  and  $(\langle \check{M} \mid j < i \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  have been defined. Since they are both directed systems, we can take direct limits, but we want to choose the representations of the direct limits carefully:

**Claim II.6.14.** *We can choose direct limits  $(M_i^*, \langle f_{j,i}^* \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}_i^*, \langle \check{f}_{j,i}^* \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  of  $(\langle M'_j \mid j < i \rangle, \langle f'_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  and  $(\langle \check{M} \mid j < i \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  respectively such that*

$$(a) \ M_i^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}_i^*$$

$$(b) \ \check{f}_{j,i}^* \text{ is an automorphism of } \check{M}_i^* \text{ for every } j \leq i$$

$$(c) \ \check{M}_i^* = \check{M} \text{ and}$$

(d)  $f_{j,i}^* \upharpoonright M_j = id_{M_j}$  for every  $j < i$ .

*Proof.* We will first find direct limits which satisfy the first 3 conditions ((a)-(c)). Then we will make adjustments to them in order to find direct limits which satisfy conditions (a)-(d) in the claim.

By Lemma II.2.7 we may choose direct limits  $(M_i^{**}, \langle f_{j,i}^{**} \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}_i^{**}, \langle \check{f}_{j,i}^{**} \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  such that  $M_i^{**} \prec_K \check{M}_i^{**}$ . By Claim II.2.8 we have that for every  $j \leq i$ ,  $\check{f}_{j,i}^{**}$  is an automorphism and  $\check{M}_i^{**} = \check{M}$ . Notice that  $(M_i^{**}, \langle f_{j,i}^{**} \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}_i^{**}, \langle \check{f}_{j,i}^{**} \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  form direct limits satisfying the first three properties. However, condition (d) may not hold. Thus some adjustments to our choice of representatives of the direct limits must be made. First notice that

**Subclaim II.6.15.**  $\langle f_{j,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j \mid j < i \rangle$  is increasing.

*Proof.* Let  $j < k < i$  be given. By construction

$$f'_{j,k} \upharpoonright M_j = id_{M_j}.$$

An application of  $f_{k,i}^{**}$  yields

$$f_{k,i}^{**} \circ f'_{j,k} \upharpoonright M_j = f_{k,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j.$$

Since  $f_{j,i}^{**}$  and  $f_{k,i}^{**}$  come from a direct limit of the system which includes the mapping  $f'_{j,k}$ , we have

$$f_{j,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j = f_{k,i}^{**} \circ f'_{j,k} \upharpoonright M_j.$$

Combining the equalities yields

$$f_{j,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j = f_{k,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j.$$

This completes the proof of Subclaim II.6.15

⊣

We still have not finished the proof of Claim II.6.14. By the subclaim, we have that  $g := \bigcup_{j < i} f_{j,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j$  is a partial automorphism of  $\check{M}$  from  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j$  onto  $\bigcup_{j < i} f_{j,i}^{**}(M_j)$ . Since  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model and since  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j$  is an amalgamation base we can extend  $g$  to  $G \in \text{Aut}(\check{M})$  by Proposition II.2.36. Notice this is the point of the proof where we use the assumption of niceness when we observe that  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j$  is an amalgamation base.

Now consider the direct limit defined by  $M_i^* := G^{-1}(M_i^{**})$  with  $\langle f_{j,i}^* := G^{-1} \circ f_{j,i}^{**} \mid j < i \rangle$  and  $f_{i,i}^* = \text{id}_{M_i^*}$  and the direct limit  $\check{M}_i^* := \check{M}$  with  $\langle \check{f}_{j,i}^* := G^{-1} \circ \check{f}_{j,i}^{**} \mid j < i \rangle$  and  $\check{f}_{i,i}^* := \text{id}_{\check{M}_i^*}$ . Notice that  $f_{j,i}^* \upharpoonright M_j = G^{-1} \circ f_{j,i}^{**} \upharpoonright M_j = \text{id}_{M_j}$  for  $j < i$ . This completes the proof of Claim II.6.14

⊥

Our choice of  $(M_i^*, \langle f_{j,i}^* \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}_i^*, \langle \check{f}_{j,i}^* \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  from Claim II.6.14 may not be enough to complete the limit step since  $M_i^*$  may contain  $a_j$  for some  $i \leq j < \alpha$ . So we need to apply weak disjoint amalgamation and find isomorphic copies of these systems. By Condition (4) of the construction, notice that  $M_i^*$  is a  $(\mu, i)$ -limit model witnessed by  $\langle f_{j,i}^*(M'_j) \mid j < i \rangle$ . Hence  $M_i^*$  is an amalgamation base. Since  $M_i^*$  and  $M_i$  both live inside of  $\check{M}$ , we can find  $M_i'' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  which is universal over  $M_i$  and universal over  $M_i^*$ . By Corollary II.5.2 applied to  $M_i$ ,  $M_\alpha$ ,  $M_i''$  and  $\langle a_l \mid l \leq i < \alpha \rangle$  we can find  $h : M_i'' \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $h \upharpoonright M_i = \text{id}_{M_i}$  and  $h(M_i'') \cap \{a_l \mid i \leq l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ .

Set  $M'_i := h(M_i'')$ ,  $f'_{i,i} := \text{id}_{M'_i}$ ,  $\check{f}'_{i,i} := \text{id}_{\check{M}}$  and for  $j < i$ ,  $f'_{j,i} := h \circ f_{j,i}^*$ . We need to verify that for  $j \leq i$ ,  $f'_{j,i}(M'_j) \cap \{a_l \mid j \leq l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ . Clearly by our application of weak disjoint amalgamation, we have that for every  $l$  with  $i \leq l < \alpha$  and every  $j \leq i$ ,  $a_l \notin f'_{j,i}(M'_j)$  since  $M'_i \supseteq f'_{j,i}(M'_j)$ . Suppose that  $j < i$  and  $l$  is such that  $j \leq l < i$ . By construction  $a_l \notin f'_{j,l+1}(M'_j)$  and  $f'_{l+1,i}(a_l) = a_l$ . So  $f'_{j,i}(M'_j) = f'_{l+1,i} \circ f'_{j,l+1}(M'_j)$  implies that  $a_l \notin f'_{j,i}(M'_j)$ .

Notice that for every  $j < i$ ,  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over both  $M'_j$  and  $f'_{j,i}(M'_j)$ . Thus by the uniqueness of  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models, we can extend  $f'_{j,i}$  to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ , denoted by  $\check{f}_{j,i}$ . This completes the limit stage of the construction.

The construction is enough: Let  $M'_\alpha$  and  $\langle f'_{i,\alpha} \mid i \leq \alpha \rangle$  be a direct limit of  $(\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \langle f'_{j,i} \mid j \leq i < \alpha \rangle)$ . By Subclaim II.6.15 we may assume that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M'_\alpha$ . It is routine to verify that  $(\langle f'_{i,\alpha}(M'_i) \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \bar{a})$  is a  $<^b_{\mu,\alpha}$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$ .

If  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is an amalgamation base we can find a  $\mathcal{K}$ -mapping as in the limit stage to choose  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} f'(M'_i) \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .

⊢

**Remark II.6.16.** Notice that the extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a})$  in Theorem II.6.11 is not continuous. Continuity of towers will be desired in the proof of the uniqueness of limit models. Taking an arbitrary  $<^b$ -extension will not give us a continuous tower. In fact, at this point, it is not apparent that any continuous extensions exist. However, in Section II.9 we will show that reduced towers are continuous and reduced towers are dense, thereby, allowing us to take continuous extensions.

**Remark II.6.17.** Although the extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a})$  is not continuous, it does have the property that  $M'_{i+1}$  is universal over  $M'_i$  for every  $i < \alpha$ .

## II.7 $<^c_{\mu,\alpha}$ Extension Property for ${}^+\mathcal{K}^*_{\mu,\alpha}$

Unfortunately, it seems that working with the relatively simple  $\mathcal{K}^*_{\mu,\alpha}$  towers is not sufficient to carry out the proof for the uniqueness of limit models. Shelah and Villaveces have identified a more elaborate tower. The extension property for these towers is also missing from [ShVi]. We provide a partial solution to this extension

property, analogous to the solution for  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$  in the previous section. In fact, we will have to further adjust our definition of towers to scattered towers in the following section. We introduce the scaled down towers of Sections II.6 and II.7 to break down the proof of the desired extension property into more manageable constructions.

We augment our towers with a dependence relation,  $\mu$ -splitting. This variant of the first-order notion of splitting is often used in AECs. Most results relying on this notion are proved under the assumption of categoricity. Just recently Grossberg and I have made progress without categoricity by considering  $\mu$ -splitting in Galois-stable AECs (see Chapter III.) Before defining  $\mu$ -splitting we need to describe what we mean by the image of a type:

**Definition II.7.1.** Let  $M$  be an amalgamation base and  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$ . If  $h$  is a  $\mathcal{K}$ -mapping with domain  $M$  we can define  $h(p)$ . Fix  $\check{M}$  a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model over  $M$ . Notice that  $\check{M}$  is saturated over  $M$ . Thus we can fix  $a \in \check{M}$  realizing  $p$ . By Proposition II.2.36, we can extend  $h$  to  $\check{h}$  an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ . Denote by  $h(p)$  the type  $\text{ga-tp}(\check{h}(a)/h(M))$ . It is routine to verify that this definition does not depend on our choice of  $\check{M}$  and  $a$ .

**Definition II.7.2.** Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal with  $\mu < \lambda$ . For  $M \in \mathcal{K}^{am}$  and  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$ , we say that  $p$   $\mu$ -splits over  $N$  iff  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  and there exist amalgamation bases  $N_1, N_2 \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  and a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $h : N_1 \cong N_2$  such that

- (1)  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_1, N_2 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$ ,
- (2)  $h(p \upharpoonright N_1) \neq p \upharpoonright N_2$  and
- (3)  $h \upharpoonright N = id_N$ .

**Remark II.7.3.** Let  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M'$  be amalgamation bases of cardinality  $\mu$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M')$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ .

- (1) (Monotonicity) Then  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ .
- (2) (Invariance) If  $h$  is a  $\prec_K$  mapping with domain  $M'$ ,  $h(\text{ga-tp}(a/M'))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $h(N)$ .

Shelah and Villaveces draw connections between categoricity and superstability-like properties using  $\mu$ -splitting. Let us recall some first order consequences of superstability. These results are consequences of  $\kappa(T) = \aleph_0$  and the finite character of forking (see Chapter III §3 of [Shc]). It is interesting that Shelah and Villaveces manage to prove analogs of these theorems without having finite character of  $\mu$ -splitting.

**Fact II.7.4.** *Let  $T$  be a countable first order theory. Suppose  $T$  is superstable. If  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \sigma \rangle$  is a  $\prec$ -increasing and continuous chain of models and  $\sigma$  is a limit ordinal, then for every  $p \in S(M_\sigma)$ , there exists  $i < \sigma$  such that  $p$  does not fork over  $M_i$ .*

**Fact II.7.5.** *Let  $T$  be a countable first order theory. Suppose  $T$  is superstable. Let  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \sigma \rangle$  be a  $\prec$ -increasing and continuous chain of models with  $\sigma$  a limit ordinal. If  $p \in S(M_\sigma)$  is such that for every  $i < \sigma$ ,  $p \restriction M_i$  does not fork over  $M_0$ , then  $p$  does not fork over  $M_0$ .*

Fact II.7.6 is an analog to Fact II.7.4, that under the assumption of categoricity there are no long splitting chains. The proof of this fact relies on a combinatorial blackbox principle (see Chapter III of [Shg].)

**Fact II.7.6 (Theorem 2.2.1 from [ShVi]).** *Under Assumption II.1.1, suppose that*

- (1)  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \sigma \rangle$  is  $\prec_K$ -increasing and continuous,
- (2) for all  $i \leq \sigma$ ,  $M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ ,

(3) for all  $i < \sigma$ ,  $M_{i+1}$  is universal over  $M_i$

(4)  $\text{cf}(\sigma) = \sigma < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$  and

(5)  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M_\sigma)$ .

Then there exists  $i < \sigma$  such that  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_i$ .

Implicit in Shelah and Villaveces' proof of Fact II.7.6 is a statement (Fact II.7.7) similar to Fact II.7.5. If Fact II.7.6 fails to be true, then there is a counter-example that has one of three properties (cases (a), (b), and (c) of their proof). Each case is separately refuted. Case (a) yields:

**Fact II.7.7.** *Under Assumption II.1.1, suppose that*

(1)  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \sigma \rangle$  is  $\prec_K$ -increasing and continuous,

(2) for all  $i \leq \sigma$ ,  $M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ ,

(3) for all  $i < \sigma$ ,  $M_{i+1}$  is universal over  $M_i$ ,

(4)  $\text{cf}(\sigma) = \sigma < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ ,

(5)  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M_\sigma)$  and

(6)  $p \restriction M_i$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$  for all  $i < \sigma$ .

Then  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ .

**Remark II.7.8.** The proofs of Fact II.7.6 and Fact II.7.7 require the full power of the categoricity assumption. In particular, Shelah and Villaveces use the fact that every model can be embedded into a reduct of an Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski model. It is open as to whether or not similar theorems can be proven under the assumption of Galois-stability in every cardinality (Galois-superstability).



We now derive the extension property for non-splitting types (Theorem II.7.9). This result does not rely on the categoricity assumption. We will use it to find extensions of towers, but it is also useful for developing a stability theory for tame abstract elementary classes in Chapter III.

**Theorem II.7.9 (Extension of non-splitting types).** *Suppose that  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  is universal over  $N$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M, \check{M})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Let  $\check{M}$  be a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit containing  $a \cup M$ .*

*Let  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  be an extension of  $M$  with  $M' \prec_\kappa \check{M}$ . Then there exists a  $\prec_\kappa$ -mapping  $g \in \text{Aut}_M(\check{M})$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a/g(M'))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Alternatively,  $g^{-1} \in \text{Aut}_M(\check{M})$  is such that  $\text{ga-tp}(g^{-1}(a)/M')$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ .*

*Proof.* Since  $M$  is universal over  $N$ , there exists a  $\prec_\kappa$  mapping  $h' : M' \rightarrow M$  with  $h' \upharpoonright N = \text{id}_N$ . By Proposition II.2.36, we can extend  $h'$  to an automorphism  $h$  of  $\check{M}$ . Notice that by monotonicity,  $\text{ga-tp}(a/h(M'))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . By invariance,

$$(*) \quad \text{ga-tp}(h^{-1}(a)/M') \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N.$$

**Subclaim II.7.10.**  $\text{ga-tp}(h^{-1}(a)/M) = \text{ga-tp}(a/M)$ .

*Proof.* We will use the notion of  $\mu$ -splitting to prove this subclaim. So let us rename the models in such a way that our application of the definition of  $\mu$ -splitting will become transparent. Let  $N_1 := h^{-1}(M)$  and  $N_2 := M$ . Let  $p := \text{ga-tp}(h^{-1}(a)/h^{-1}(M))$ . Consider the mapping  $h : N_1 \cong N_2$ . By invariance,  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Thus,  $h(p \upharpoonright N_1) = p \upharpoonright N_2$ . Let us calculate this

$$h(p \upharpoonright N_1) = \text{ga-tp}(h(h^{-1}(a))/h(h^{-1}(M))) = \text{ga-tp}(a/M).$$

While,

$$p \upharpoonright N_2 = \text{ga-tp}(h^{-1}(a)/M).$$

Thus  $\text{ga-tp}(h^{-1}(a)/M) = \text{ga-tp}(a/M)$  as required.  $\dashv$

From the subclaim, we can find a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $g \in \text{Aut}_M \check{M}$  such that  $g \circ h^{-1}(a) = a$ . Notice that by applying  $g$  to  $(*)$  we get

$$(**) \quad \text{ga-tp}(a/g(M'), \check{M}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N.$$

Applying  $g^{-1}$  to  $(**)$  gives us the *alternatively* clause:

$$\text{ga-tp}(g^{-1}(a)/M', \check{M}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N.$$

$\dashv$

**Theorem II.7.11 (Uniqueness of non-splitting extensions).** *Let  $N, M, M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  be such that  $M'$  is universal over  $M$  and  $M$  is universal over  $N$ . If  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ , then there is a unique  $p' \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  such that  $p'$  extends  $p$  and  $p'$  does not  $\mu$  split over  $N$ .*

*Proof.* By Theorem II.7.9, there exists  $p' \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  extending  $p$  such that  $p'$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Suppose for the sake of contradiction that there exists  $q \neq p' \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  extending  $p$  and not  $\mu$ -splitting over  $N$ . Let  $a, b$  be such that  $p' = \text{ga-tp}(a/M')$  and  $q = \text{ga-tp}(b/M')$ . Since  $M$  is universal over  $N$ , there exists a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $f : M' \rightarrow M$  with  $f \upharpoonright N = \text{id}_N$ . Since  $p'$  and  $q$  do not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$  we have

$$(*)_a \quad \text{ga-tp}(a/f(M')) = \text{ga-tp}(f(a)/f(M')) \text{ and}$$

$$(*)_b \quad \text{ga-tp}(b/f(M')) = \text{ga-tp}(f(b)/f(M')).$$

On the other hand, since  $p \neq q$ , we have that

$$(*) \quad \text{ga-tp}(f(a)/f(M')) \neq \text{ga-tp}(f(b)/f(M')).$$

Combining  $(*)_a$ ,  $(*)_b$  and  $(*)$ , we get

$$\text{ga-tp}(a/f(M')) \neq \text{ga-tp}(b/f(M')).$$

Since  $f(M') \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$ , this inequality witnesses that

$$\text{ga-tp}(a/M) \neq \text{ga-tp}(b/M),$$

contradicting our choice of  $p'$  and  $q$  extending  $p$ . ⊥

Now we incorporate  $\mu$ -splitting into our definition of towers.

$$\textbf{Definition II.7.12. } {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^* := \left\{ (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \left| \begin{array}{l} (\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*; \\ \bar{N} = \langle N_i \mid i + 1 < \alpha \rangle; \\ \text{for every } i + 1 < \alpha, N_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_i; \\ M_i \text{ is universal over } N_i \text{ and;} \\ \text{ga-tp}(a_i/M_i, M_{i+1}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N_i. \end{array} \right. \right\} -$$

**Remark II.7.13.** The sequence  $\langle N_i \mid i + 1 < \alpha \rangle$  is not necessarily  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing or continuous.

Similar to the case of  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$  we define an ordering,

**Definition II.7.14.** For  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  and  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$ , we say  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) <_{\mu,\alpha}^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  iff

$$(1) \ (\bar{M}, \bar{a}) <_{\mu,\alpha}^b (\bar{M}', \bar{a}')$$

$$(2) \ \bar{N} = \bar{N}' \text{ and}$$

$$(3) \ \text{for every } i < \alpha, \text{ga-tp}(a_i/M'_i, M'_{i+1}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N_i.$$

**Remark II.7.15.** Notice that in Definition II.7.14, condition (3) follows from (2).

We list it as a separate condition to emphasize the role of  $\mu$ -splitting.

**Notation II.7.16.** We say that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is *nice* iff when  $i$  is a limit ordinal  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j$  is an amalgamation base.

We now prove the  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ -extension property for nice towers.

**Theorem II.7.17 (The  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ -extension property for nice towers).** *If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  is nice, then there exists a nice  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) <_{\mu, \alpha}^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}')$ . Moreover if  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is an amalgamation base such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  for some  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit,  $\check{M}$ , then we can find  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  such that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal and  $\alpha$  a limit ordinal such that  $\alpha < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ . Let  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  be given. Denote by  $M_\alpha$  a model in  $\mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  extending  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$ . Fix  $\check{M}$  to be a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model over  $M_\alpha$ .

Similar to the proof of Theorem II.6.11, we will define by induction on  $i < \alpha$  a sequence of models  $\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  and sequences of  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings,  $\langle f'_{j,i} \mid j < i < \alpha \rangle$  and  $\langle \check{f}_{j,i} \mid j < i < \alpha \rangle$  such that for  $i \leq \alpha$ :

- (1)  $(\langle f'_{j,i}(M'_j) \mid j \leq i \rangle, \bar{a} \restriction i, \bar{N} \restriction i)$  is a  $<_{\mu, i}^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \restriction i$ ,
- (2)  $(\langle M'_j \mid j < i \rangle, \langle f'_{j,i} \mid j \leq i \rangle)$  forms a directed system,
- (3)  $M'_i$  is universal over  $M_i$ ,
- (4)  $M'_{i+1}$  is universal over  $f'_{i,i+1}(M'_i)$ ,
- (5)  $f'_{j,i} \restriction M_j = id_{M_j}$ ,
- (6)  $M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ ,
- (7)  $f'_{j,i}$  can be extended to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ ,  $\check{f}_{j,i}$ , for  $j \leq i$  and

(8)  $(\langle \check{M} \mid j < i \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  forms a directed system.

The construction is enough: We can take  $M'_\alpha$  and  $\langle f'_{i,\alpha} \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  to be a direct limit of  $(\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \langle f'_{j,i} \mid j \leq i < \alpha \rangle)$ . Since  $f'_{j,i} \upharpoonright M_j = id_{M_j}$ , for every  $j \leq i < \alpha$ , we may assume that  $f'_{i,\alpha} \upharpoonright M_i = id_{M_i}$  for every  $i < \alpha$ . Notice that  $(\langle f'_{i,\alpha}(M'_i) \mid i < \alpha \rangle, \bar{a})$  is a  $<^c_{\mu,\alpha}$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a})$ . For the moreover part, simply continue the construction one more step for  $i = \alpha$ .

The construction is possible:

$i = 0$ : Since  $M_0$  is an amalgamation base, we can find  $M''_0 \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  (a first approximation of the desired  $M'_0$ ) such that  $M''_0$  is universal over  $M_0$ . By Theorem II.7.9, we may assume that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_0/M''_0)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$  and  $M''_0 \prec_\mathcal{K} \check{M}$ . Since  $a_0 \notin M_0$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a_0/M_0)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$ , we know that  $a_0 \notin M''_0$ . But, we might have that for some  $l > 0$ ,  $a_l \in M''_0$ . We use weak disjoint amalgamation to avoid  $\{a_l \mid 0 < l < \alpha\}$ . By the Downward Löwenheim-Skolem Axiom for AECs (Axiom 6) we can choose  $M^2 \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  such that  $M''_0, M_1 \prec_\mathcal{K} M^2 \prec_\mathcal{K} \check{M}$ .

By Corollary II.5.2 (applied to  $M_1, M_\alpha, M^2$  and  $\langle a_l \mid 0 < l < \alpha \rangle$ ), we can find a  $\prec_\mathcal{K}$ -mapping  $h$  such that

- $h : M^2 \rightarrow \check{M}$
- $h \upharpoonright M_1 = id_{M_1}$
- $h(M^2) \cap \{a_l \mid 0 < l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$

Define  $M'_0 := h(M''_0)$ . Notice that  $a_0 \notin M'_0$  because  $a_0 \notin M''_0$  and  $h(a_0) = a_0$ . Clearly  $M'_0 \cap \{a_l \mid 0 \leq l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ , since  $M''_0 \prec_\mathcal{K} M^2$  and  $h(M^2) \cap \{a_l \mid 0 < l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ . We need only verify that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_0/M'_0)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$ . By invariance,  $\text{ga-tp}(a_0/M''_0)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$  implies that  $\text{ga-tp}(h(a_0)/h(M''_0))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$ . But recall  $h(a_0) = a_0$  and  $h(M''_0) = M'_0$ . Thus  $\text{ga-tp}(a_0/M'_0)$  does

not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_0$ .

Set  $\check{f}_{0,0} := id_{\check{M}}$  and  $f'_{0,0} := id_{M'_0}$ .

$i = j + 1$ : Suppose that we have completed the construction for all  $k \leq j$ . Since  $M'_j, M_{j+1} \prec_K \check{M}$ , we can apply the Downward-Löwenheim Axiom for AECs to find  $M'''_{j+1}$  (a first approximation to  $M'_{j+1}$ ) a model of cardinality  $\mu$  extending both  $M'_j$  and  $M_{j+1}$ . WLOG by Subclaim II.6.13 we may assume that  $M'''_{j+1}$  is a limit model of cardinality  $\mu$  and  $M'''_{j+1}$  is universal over  $M_{j+1}$  and  $M'_j$ . By Theorem II.7.9, we can find a  $\prec_K$  mapping  $f : M'''_{j+1} \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $f \upharpoonright M_{j+1} = id_{M_{j+1}}$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{j+1}/f(M'''_{j+1}))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{j+1}$ . Set  $M''_{j+1} := f(M'''_{j+1})$ .

**Subclaim II.7.18.**  $a_{j+1} \notin M''_{j+1}$

*Proof.* Suppose that  $a_{j+1} \in M''_{j+1}$ . Since  $M_{j+1}$  is universal over  $N_{j+1}$ , there exists a  $\prec_K$ -mapping,  $g : M''_{j+1} \rightarrow M_{j+1}$  such that  $g \upharpoonright N_{j+1} = id_{N_{j+1}}$ . Since  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{j+1}/M''_{j+1})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{j+1}$ , we have that

$$\text{ga-tp}(a_{j+1}/g(M''_{j+1})) = \text{ga-tp}(g(a_{j+1})/g(M''_{j+1})).$$

Notice that because  $g(a_{j+1}) \in g(M''_{j+1})$ , we have that  $a_{j+1} = g(a_{j+1})$ . Thus  $a_{j+1} \in g(M''_{j+1}) \prec_K M_{j+1}$ . This contradicts the definition of towers:  $a_{j+1} \notin M_{j+1}$ .

⊥

$M''_{j+1}$  may serve us well if it does not contain any  $a_l$  for  $j + 1 \leq l < \alpha$ , but this is not guaranteed. So we need to make an adjustment. Let  $M^2$  be a model of cardinality  $\mu$  such that  $M_{j+2}, M''_{j+1} \prec_K M^2 \prec_K \check{M}$ . Notice that  $\check{M}$  is universal over  $M_{j+2}$ . Thus we can apply Corollary II.5.2 to  $M_{j+2}$ ,  $M_\alpha$ ,  $M^2$  and  $\langle a_l \mid j + 2 \leq l < \alpha \rangle$ . This yields a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $h$  such that

$$\cdot \ h : M^2 \rightarrow \check{M}$$

·  $h \upharpoonright M_{j+2} = id_{M_{j+2}}$  and

·  $h(M^2) \cap \{a_l \mid j+2 \leq l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ .

Set  $M'_{j+1} := h(M''_{j+1})$ . Notice that by invariance,  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{j+1}/M'_{j+1})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{j+1}$  implies that  $\text{ga-tp}(h(a_{j+1})/h(M''_{j+1}))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $h(N_{j+1})$ . Recalling that  $h \upharpoonright M_{j+2} = id_{M_{j+2}}$  we have that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{j+1}/M'_{j+1})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{j+1}$ . We need to verify that  $a_{j+1} \notin M'_{j+1}$ . This holds because  $a_{j+1} \notin M''_{j+1}$  and  $h(a_{j+1}) = a_{j+1}$ .

Set  $f'_{j+1,j+1} = id_{M_{j+1,j+1}}$  and  $\check{f}_{j+1,j+1} = id_{\check{M}}$  and  $f'_{j,j+1} := h \circ f \upharpoonright M'_j$ . Since  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over both  $M'_j$  and  $f'_{j,j+1}(M'_j)$ , we can extend  $f'_{j,j+1}$  to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ , denoted by  $\check{f}_{j,j+1}$ .

To guarantee that we have a directed system, for  $k < j$ , define  $f'_{k,j+1} := f'_{j,j+1} \circ f'_{k,j}$  and  $\check{f}_{k,j+1} := \check{f}_{j,j+1} \circ \check{f}_{k,j}$ .

*i is a limit ordinal:* Suppose that  $(\langle M'_j \mid j < i \rangle, \langle f'_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  and  $(\langle \check{M} \mid j < i \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{k,j} \mid k \leq j < i \rangle)$  have been defined. Since they are both directed systems, we can take direct limits. By niceness we can apply Claim II.6.14, so that we may assume that  $(M_i^*, \langle f_{j,i}^* \mid j < i \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}, \langle \check{f}_{j,i}^* \mid j < i \rangle)$  are the respective direct limits such that  $M_i^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  and  $\bigcup_{j < i} M_j \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_i^*$ . By Condition (4) of the construction, notice that  $M_i^*$  is a  $(\mu, i)$ -limit model witnessed by  $\langle f_{j,i}^*(M'_j) \mid j < i \rangle$ . Hence  $M_i^*$  is an amalgamation base. Since  $M_i^*$  and  $M_i$  both live inside of  $\check{M}$ , we can find  $M_i''' \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^*$  which is universal over  $M_i$  and universal over  $M_i^*$ .

By Theorem II.7.9 we can find a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f : M_i''' \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $f \upharpoonright M_i = id_{M_i}$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i/f(M_i'''))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$ . Set  $M_i'' := f(M_i''')$ . By a similar argument to Subclaim II.7.18, we can see that  $a_i \notin M_i''$ .

$M_i''$  may contain some  $a_l$  when  $i \leq l < \alpha$ . We need to make an adjustment using weak disjoint amalgamation. Let  $M^2$  be a model of cardinality  $\mu$  such that

$M''_i, M_{i+1} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M^2 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . By Corollary II.5.2 applied to  $M_i, M_\alpha, M^2$  and  $\langle a_l \mid i < l < \alpha \rangle$  we can find  $h : M''_i \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $h \upharpoonright M_{i+1} = id_{M_{i+1}}$  and  $h(M^2) \cap \{a_l \mid i < l < \alpha\} = \emptyset$ .

Set  $M'_i := h(M''_i)$ . We need to verify that  $a_i \notin M'_i$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i/M'_i)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$ . Since  $a_i \notin M''_i$  and  $h(a_i) = a_i$ , we have that  $a_i \notin h(M''_i) = M'_i$ . By invariance of non-splitting,  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i/M''_i)$  not  $\mu$ -splitting over  $N_i$  implies that  $\text{ga-tp}(h(a_i)/h(M''_i))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $h(N_i)$ . Recalling our definition of  $h$  and  $M'_i$ . This yields  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i/M'_i)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$ .

Set  $f'_{i,i} := id_{M_{i,i}}, \check{f}_{i,i} := id_{\check{M}}$  and for  $j < i$ ,  $f'_{j,i} := h \circ f \circ f_{j,i}^*$ .

Notice that for every  $j < i$ ,  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over both  $M'_j$  and  $f'_{j,i}(M'_j)$ . Thus by the uniqueness of  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit models, we can extend  $f'_{j,i}$  to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ , denoted by  $\check{f}_{j,i}$ .

⊢

## II.8 Extension Property for Scattered Towers

We now make the final modification to the towers and prove an extension theorem for these scattered towers. Let's recall the general strategy for proving the uniqueness of limit models. Our goal is to construct an array of models  $\langle M_j^i \mid j \leq \theta_2, i \leq \theta_1 \rangle$  of width  $\theta_2$  and height  $\theta_1$  such that the union will be simultaneously a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model (witnessed by  $\langle M_j^{\theta_1} \mid j < \theta_2 \rangle$ ) and a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model (witnessed by  $\langle M_{\theta_2}^i \mid i < \theta_1 \rangle$ ). In spirit our construction will behave this way, but the technical details involve an array of models indexed by  $\mu^+ \times (\mu \cdot \mu^+)$ .

A straightforward construction on  $\theta_1 \times \theta_2$  is too much to expect for the following reasons:



- (1) We would like  $\bigcup_{i < \theta_2} M_i^{\theta_1}$  to be a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model. One way to accomplish this would be to focus on towers  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\gamma \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \theta_2}^*$  such that

$$(*) \quad M_{i+1}^\gamma \text{ is universal over } M_i^\gamma \text{ for all } i < \theta_2.$$

While these towers are easy to construct, in our  $<_{\mu, \theta_2}^c$ -increasing and continuous chain of such towers, we could not guarantee  $(*)$  to occur at limit stages  $\beta$ . Consider the  $<_{\mu, \theta_2}^c$ -increasing and continuous chain,  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\gamma \mid \gamma \leq \beta \rangle$ . For  $\beta$  a limit ordinal  $< \mu^+$ , the tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$  may not satisfy  $(*)$ . Even in first order logic it is unknown whether  $M_{i+1}^\gamma$  universal over  $M_i^\gamma$  for all  $\gamma < \beta$  implies that  $M_{i+1}^\beta$  is universal over  $M_i^\beta$ . This seems like too much to hope to be true.

There are several tools to deal with this difficulty. We introduce the notion of relatively full towers (Definition II.10.7) which are towers realizing many strong types. If a tower,  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ , is relatively full and continuous, then the top of the tower,  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is a  $(\mu, \alpha)$ -limit model (Theorem II.10.12).

Once we have the existence of relatively full towers, we need to guarantee that each is continuous in order to apply Theorem II.10.12. Continuity is not immediate. In fact, continuous extensions are hard to find (Remark II.6.16). To remedy this, Shelah and Villaveces restrict themselves to reduced towers (Definition II.9.1). An increasing and continuous chain of reduced towers results in an array such that  $M_i^\beta \cap M_j^\gamma = M_j^\beta$  for  $\beta < \gamma$  and  $i < j$ . All reduced towers are continuous (Theorem II.9.7). So the density of reduced towers with respect to the ordering  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$  (Proposition II.9.6) gives us continuous extensions of all nice towers.

- (2) While our ordering on towers is enough to get that  $M_i^{\theta_1}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit for  $i < \theta_2$  (witnessed by  $\langle M_i^j \mid j < \theta_1 \rangle$ ), we cannot say anything about the model

$M_{\theta_2}^{\theta_1}$ . Unfortunately it is not reasonable to "fix" our definition of ordering to guarantee that  $M_{\theta_2}^{\theta_1}$  is a limit model, since we would then be unable (at least we see no way of doing it directly) to prove the extension property for towers.

Instead, we define scattered towers (Definition II.8.2). Since we know that  $M_i^{\theta_1}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit for  $i < \theta_2$  (witnessed by  $\langle M_i^j \mid j < \theta_1 \rangle$ ), the idea is to construct a very wide array of towers (of width  $\mu^+$ ) and then focus in on some  $\alpha < \mu^+$  of cofinality  $\theta_2$ . Then  $M_\alpha^{\theta_1}$  won't be in the last column of the array, so the ordering will guarantee us that  $M_\alpha^{\theta_1}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit (witnessed by  $\langle M_\alpha^j \mid j < \theta_1 \rangle$ ). However, we have not proved an extension property for towers of width  $\mu^+$ . Our arguments won't generalize to  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mu^+}$  because Fact II.5.1 (Weak Disjoint Amalgamation) isn't strong enough since we would have  $\mu^+$  many elements to avoid ( $\{a_i \mid i < \mu^+\}$ ). So we will construct the tower in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mu^+}$  in  $\mu^+$ -many stages by shorter towers (in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  for  $\alpha < \mu^+$ ). To do this we introduce the notion of scattered towers, which will allow us to extend a tower in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  to a longer tower in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \beta}^*$  when  $\alpha < \beta < \mu^+$  (Theorem II.8.8).

**Notation II.8.1.** Let  $\alpha$  be an ordinal. We say that  $\mathfrak{U} \subseteq \mathcal{P}(\alpha)$  is a *set of disjoint intervals of  $\alpha$  of which one contains 0* provided that

- $0 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$ ,
- for  $u_1 \neq u_2 \in \mathfrak{U}$ ,  $u_1 \cap u_2 = \emptyset$  and
- for  $u \in \mathfrak{U}$ , if  $\beta_1 < \beta_2 \in u$ , then for every  $\gamma$  with  $\beta_1 < \gamma < \beta_2$ , we have  $\gamma \in u$ .

Since we will not be looking at any other sets of intervals, we abbreviate a *set of disjoint intervals of  $\alpha$  of which one contains 0* as a *set of intervals*.

**Definition II.8.2 (Definition 3.3.1 of [ShVi]).** For  $\mathfrak{U}$  a set of intervals of ordi-

nals  $< \mu^+$ , let

$${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^* := \left\{ (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \left| \begin{array}{l} \bar{M} = \langle M_i \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \rangle; \\ \bar{M} \text{ is } \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \text{ increasing, but not} \\ \text{necessarily continuous;} \\ a_i \in M_{i+1} \setminus M_i \text{ when } i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}; \\ \bar{N} = \langle N_i \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \rangle; \\ M_i \text{ is universal over } N_i \text{ when } i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \text{ and} \\ \text{ga-tp}(a_i, M_i, M_{i+1}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N_i \end{array} \right. \right\}$$

We refer to an element  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  as a *scattered tower*.

**Remark II.8.3.** Suppose that  $I$  is a well-ordering. Then if  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is a tower indexed by  $I$ , we can find  $\alpha$  an ordinal, such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ . This allows us to interchange between sequences of well-orderings (such as ordered pairs of ordinals, ordered lexicographically) and sequences of intervals of ordinals.

Notice that these *scattered towers* are in some sense subtowers of the towers  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ . Hence we can consider the restriction of  $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$  to the class  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$ :

**Definition II.8.4 (Definition 3.3.2 of [ShVi]).** Let  $(\bar{M}^l, \bar{a}^l, \bar{N}^l) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  for  $l = 1, 2$ .  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \leq^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  iff for  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$ ,

- (1)  $M_i^1 \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} M_i^2$ ,  $a_i^1 = a_i^2$  and  $N_i^1 = N_i^2$  and
- (2) if  $M_i^1 \neq M_i^2$ , then  $M_i^2$  is universal over  $M_i^1$ .

We say that  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) <^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  provided that for every  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$ ,  $M_i^1 \neq M_i^2$ .

Actually we can extend the ordering to compare towers from classes  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_1}^*$  and  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_2}^*$  when  $\mathfrak{U}_2$  is an interval-extension of  $\mathfrak{U}_1$ . By interval-extension we mean:

**Definition II.8.5.**  $\mathfrak{U}_2$  is an *interval-extension* of  $\mathfrak{U}_1$  iff for every  $u_1 \in \mathfrak{U}_1$ , there is  $u_2 \in \mathfrak{U}_2$  such that  $u_1 \subseteq u_2$ . We write  $\mathfrak{U}^1 \subset_{int} \mathfrak{U}^2$  when  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  is an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}^1$ .

**Definition II.8.6.** Let  $\mathfrak{U}_2$  be an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}_1$ . Let  $(\bar{M}^l, \bar{a}^l, \bar{N}^l) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_l}^*$  for  $l = 1, 2$ .  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \leq^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  iff for  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_1$ ,

- (1)  $M_i^1 \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} M_i^2$ ,  $a_i^1 = a_i^2$  and  $N_i^1 = N_i^2$  and
- (2) if  $M_i^1 \neq M_i^2$ , then  $M_i^2$  is universal over  $M_i^1$ .

Now we can generalize the notion of niceness and prove an extension property for the class of all scattered towers.

**Definition II.8.7.** A scattered tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is said to be *nice* provided that whenever a limit ordinal  $i$  is a limit of some sequence of elements from  $\bigcup \mathfrak{U}$ , then  $\bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}, j < i} M_j$  is an amalgamation base.

**Theorem II.8.8 ( $<^c$ -Extension Property for Nice Scattered Towers).** *Let  $\mathfrak{U}^1$  and  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  be sets of intervals of ordinals  $< \mu^+$  such that  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  is an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}^1$ . Let  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^1}^*$  be a nice scattered tower. There exists a nice scattered tower  $(\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^2}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) <^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$ .*

*Moreover, if  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i$  is an amalgamation base and  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  for some  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit  $\check{M}$ , then we can find  $(\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  such that  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ .*

*Proof.* While the proof does not rely on the extension properties from Sections II.6 and II.7, understanding these sections clarifies the structure of this proof. WLOG we can rewrite  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  as a collection of disjoint intervals such that for every  $u^2 \in \mathfrak{U}^2$ , there exists at most one  $u^1 \in \mathfrak{U}^1$  such that  $u^1 \subseteq u^2$ . Let us enumerate  $\mathfrak{U}^1$  as  $\langle u_t^1 \mid t \in \alpha^1 \rangle$  in increasing order (in other words when  $t < t' \in \alpha^1$  we have that  $\max(u_t^1) < \min(u_{t'}^1)$ .)

For bookkeeping purposes, we will enumerate  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  as  $\langle u_t^2 \mid t \in \alpha^1 \rangle$  where

$$u_t^2 = \begin{cases} \{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \mid \min\{u_t^1\} \leq i < \min\{u_{t+1}^1\}\} & \text{if } t+1 < \alpha^1 \\ \{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \mid \min\{u_t^1\} \leq i\} & \text{otherwise} \end{cases}$$

Notice that  $u_2^2$  is not necessarily an interval.

**Remark II.8.9.** The second part of the definition of  $u_t^2$  is used only to define  $u_{\alpha^1}^2$  when  $\alpha^1$  is a successor ordinal.

Since  $0 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1$ , this enumeration of  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  can be carried out.

Given  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^1}^*$  a nice tower, we will find a  $<^c$ -extension in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^2}^*$  by using direct limits inside a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model as we have done in the proofs of Theorem II.6.11 and Theorem II.7.17. As before, fix  $\check{M}$  a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model containing  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1} M_i^1$ . We will define approximations to a tower in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^2}^*$  with towers in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_t^2}^*$  extending towers in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_t^1}^*$  where  $\mathfrak{U}_t^l = \{u_s^l \mid s \leq t\}$  for  $l = 1, 2$ .

These partial extensions will be defined by constructing sequences of models  $\langle M_i^2 \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \rangle$  and  $\langle N_i^2 \mid i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \rangle$ , a sequence of elements  $\langle a_i^2 \mid i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \rangle$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $\{f_{s,t} \mid s \leq t < \alpha^1\}$  (or  $\{f_{s,t} \mid s \leq t \leq \alpha^1\}$  for  $\alpha^1$  a successor) satisfying

$$(1) (\langle f_{s,t}(M_i^2) \mid i \in u_s^2 \text{ and } s \leq t \rangle, \bar{a}^t, \bar{N}^t) \text{ is a } <_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_t^2}^c\text{-extension of } (\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U}_t^1$$

$$\text{where } \bar{a}^t = \langle a_i^2 \mid i, i+1 \in \mathfrak{U}_t^2 \rangle \text{ and } \bar{N}^t = \langle N_i^2 \mid i, i+1 \in \mathfrak{U}_t^2 \rangle,$$

$$(2) (\langle M^s \mid s \leq t \rangle, \langle f_{s,t} \mid s \leq t \rangle) \text{ forms a directed system where } M^s = \bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2.$$

$$(3) M_i^2 \text{ is universal over } M_i^1 \text{ for all } i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_t^1,$$

$$(4) M_j^2 \text{ is universal over } f_{s,t}(M_i^2) \text{ for every } i < j \text{ and } s \leq t \text{ such that } i \in u_s^2 \text{ and } j \in u_t^2 \text{ (consequently, } M^{t+1} \text{ is universal over } f_{t,t+1}(M^t)),$$

$$(5) f_{s,t} \upharpoonright M_j^1 = id_{M_j^1} \text{ for all } j \in u_s^2,$$

$$(6) M_i^2 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M},$$

(7)  $f_{s,t}$  can be extended to an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ ,  $\check{f}_{s,t}$ , for  $s \leq t < \alpha^1$  and

(8)  $(\langle \check{M} \mid s \leq t \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{s,t} \mid s \leq t \rangle)$  forms a directed system.

The construction is enough:

Let  $\alpha := \alpha^1$  if  $\alpha^1$  is a limit, otherwise  $\alpha := \alpha^1 + 1$ . We can take  $M'_\alpha$  and  $\langle f_{t,\alpha} \mid t \leq \alpha \rangle$  to be a direct limit of  $(\langle M^t \mid t < \alpha \rangle, \langle f_{s,t} \mid s \leq t < \alpha \rangle)$ . Since  $f_{s,t} \upharpoonright M_i^1 = id_{M_i^1}$ , for every  $i \in u_s^2$ , we may assume that  $f_{t,\alpha} \upharpoonright M^t = id_{M^t}$  for every  $t < \alpha$ . Notice that  $(\langle f_{t,\alpha}(M'_i) \mid i \in u_t^2, t < \alpha \rangle, \langle a_i^2 \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \rangle, \langle N_i^2 \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^2 \rangle)$  is a  $<_{\mu,\alpha}^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^1$ . For the moreover part, simply continue the construction one more limit step.

The construction:

$t = 0$ : First notice that by Theorem II.7.17, we can find  $\langle M'_i \mid i \in u_0^1 \rangle$  such that  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}^1 \upharpoonright u_0^1, \bar{N}^1 \upharpoonright u_0^1)$  is a  $<_{\mathfrak{U}_0^1}^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U}_0^1$  and  $\bar{M}'$  avoids  $\bar{a}^1$  above  $u_0^1$  (specifically  $(\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i) \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus u_0^1\} = \emptyset$ .) Moreover the proof of Theorem 7.10 gives us an extension such that  $\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i$  is a limit model.

We can choose  $M^\dagger \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  such that  $\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i, M_{\min\{u_1^1\}}^1 \prec_\mathcal{K} M^\dagger \prec_\mathcal{K} \check{M}$  and  $M^\dagger$  is a  $(\mu, \gamma_0^\dagger)$ -limit over  $\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i$  where  $\gamma_0^\dagger$  is  $\text{otp}(u_0^2)$  if  $u_0^2$  is infinite, otherwise  $\gamma_0^\dagger = \omega$ . This is possible since  $\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i$  is an amalgamation base. Let  $\langle M_\gamma^\dagger \mid \gamma < \gamma_0^\dagger \rangle$  witness that  $M^\dagger$  is a  $(\mu, \gamma_0^\dagger)$ -limit over  $\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i$ . Since limit models are amalgamation bases, we may choose  $M_{\gamma+1}^\dagger$  to be a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit over  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ .

By weak disjoint amalgamation (Corollary II.5.2) applied to  $(\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M_i^1, \bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M'_i, M^\dagger)$  and  $\{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus u_0^1\}$ , there exists an automorphism  $g$  of  $\check{M}$  such that

- $g \upharpoonright \bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M_i^1 = id_{\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M_i^1}$  and
- $g(M^\dagger) \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus u_0^1\} = \emptyset$ .

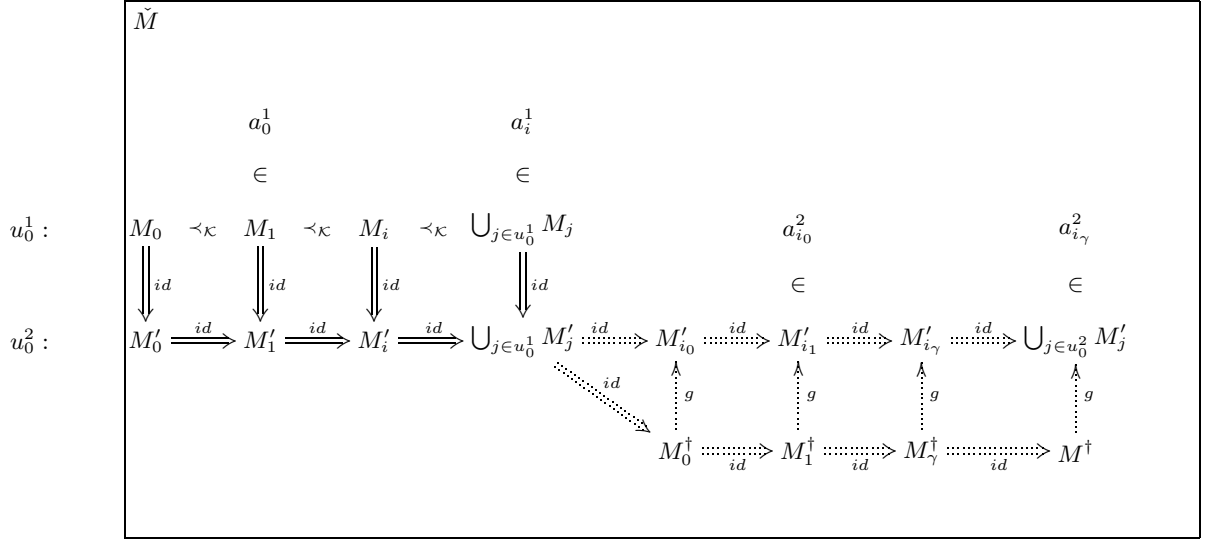
Denote by  $\langle i_\gamma \mid \gamma \in \text{otp}(u_0^2 \setminus u_0^1) \rangle$  the increasing enumeration of  $u_0^2 \setminus u_0^1$ . Define

$$M_i^2 := \begin{cases} g(M'_i) & \text{for } i \in u_0^1 \\ g(M_\gamma^\dagger) & \text{for } i = i_\gamma \in u_0^2 \setminus u_0^1 \end{cases}$$

Since  $M^\dagger$  is a limit model witnessed by the  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ 's, we can choose  $a_i^2 \in M_{i+1}^2 \setminus M_i^2$  for all  $i, i+1 \in u_0^2 \setminus u_0^1$ . Since  $M_i^2$  is a limit model for each  $i, i+1 \in u_0^2 \setminus u_0^1$ , we can apply Fact II.7.6 to find  $N_i^2 \prec_\kappa M_i^2$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i^2/M_i^2)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i^2$  and  $M_i^2$  is universal over  $N_i^2$ .

All that remains is to define  $f_{0,0} := \text{id}_{\bigcup_{i \in u_0^1} M_i^1}$  and  $\check{f}_{0,0} := \text{id}_{\check{M}}$ .

Below is a depiction of the base case. The diagram also applies to the construction in the successor and limit steps.



$t = s+1$  : By condition (4) of the construction, we have that  $\bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2$  is a limit model witnessed by  $\langle f_{r,s}(M_i^2) \mid i \in u_r^2 \text{ and } r \leq s \rangle$ . Thus  $\bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2$  is an amalgamation base. Now we can choose a model  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  such that  $\bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2, M_{\min\{u_{s+1}^1\}}^1 \prec_\kappa M'$  and  $M''$  is a  $(\mu, |u_{s+1}^2| + \aleph_0)$ -limit over  $\bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2$ . By identical arguments to the successor case in Theorem II.7.17, we can find  $\bar{M}' = \langle M'_i \mid i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1 \rangle$  and an automorphism  $h$  of  $\check{M}$  such that

$\cdot (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  is a nice scattered tower, where  $\bar{a}' = \langle a_i^2 \mid i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1 \rangle$  and

$$\bar{N}' = \langle N_i^2 \mid i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1 \rangle$$

$$\cdot (\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U}_{s+1}^1 <^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$$

$$\cdot \bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1} M'_i \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_{s+1}^1\} = \emptyset.$$

$$\cdot h \upharpoonright M'' : M'' \cong M'_{\min\{u_{s+1}^1\}} \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot h \upharpoonright M_{\min\{u_{s+1}^1\}}^1 = id_{M_{\min\{u_{s+1}^1\}}^1}.$$

Let  $M^\dagger$  be a  $(\mu, \gamma_{s+1}^\dagger)$ -limit model over  $\bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1} M'_i$  such that  $M_{\min\{u_{s+2}^2\}}^1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M^\dagger \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ , where  $\gamma_{s+1}^\dagger$  is  $\text{otp}(u_{s+1}^2)$  if  $u_{s+1}^2$  is infinite, otherwise  $\gamma_{s+1}^\dagger = \omega$ . Let  $\langle M_\gamma^\dagger \mid \gamma < \gamma_{s+1}^\dagger \rangle$  witness that  $M^\dagger$  is a limit model. Since limit models are amalgamation bases, we may choose  $M_{\gamma+1}^\dagger$  to be a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit over  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ .

Applying Corollary II.5.2 to  $(\bigcup_{i \in u_{s+1}^1} M_i^1, \bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_{s+1}^1} M'_i, M^\dagger)$  and  $\{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_{s+1}^1\}$ , there exists an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ ,  $g$ , such that

$$\cdot g \upharpoonright \bigcup_{i \in u_{s+1}^1} M_i^1 = id_{\bigcup_{i \in u_{s+1}^1} M_i^1} \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot g(M^\dagger) \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_{s+1}^1\} = \emptyset.$$

Denote by  $\langle i_\gamma \mid \gamma \in \text{otp}(u_{s+1}^2 \setminus u_{s+1}^1) \rangle$  the increasing enumeration of  $u_{s+1}^2 \setminus u_{s+1}^1$ .

Define

$$M_i^2 := \begin{cases} g(M'_i) & \text{for } i \in u_{s+1}^1 \\ g(M_\gamma^\dagger) & \text{for } i = i_\gamma \in u_{s+1}^2 \setminus u_{s+1}^1 \end{cases}$$

Since  $M^\dagger$  is a limit model witnessed by the  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ 's, we can choose  $a_i^2 \in M_{i+1}^2 \setminus M_i^2$  for all  $i, i+1 \in u_{s+1}^2 \setminus u_{s+1}^1$ . Since  $M_i^2$  is a limit model for each  $i, i+1 \in u_{s+1}^2 \setminus u_{s+1}^1$ , we can apply Theorem 7.2 to find  $N_i^2 \preceq_{\mathcal{K}} M_i^2$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i^2/M_i^2)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i^2$  and  $M_i^2$  is universal over  $N_i^2$ .

Define  $f_{s,s+1} := g \circ h \upharpoonright \bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2$  and  $\check{f}_{s,s+1} := g \circ h$ . To complete the definition of a directed system, for every  $r \leq s$ , set  $f_{r,s+1} := f_{s,s+1} \circ f_{r,s}$  and  $\check{f}_{r,s} := \check{f}_{s,s+1} \circ \check{f}_{r,s}$ .



$t$  is a limit ordinal: Suppose that  $(\langle \bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2 (= M^s) \mid s < t \rangle, \langle f_{r,s} \mid r \leq s < t \rangle)$  and  $(\langle \check{M} \mid s < t \rangle, \langle \check{f}_{r,s} \mid r \leq s < t \rangle)$  have been defined. Since these are both directed systems, we can take direct limits. By niceness, we can apply Claim II.6.14, so that we may assume that  $(M^*, \langle f_{s,t}^* \mid s \leq t \rangle)$  and  $(\check{M}, \langle \check{f}_{s,t}^* \mid s \leq t \rangle)$  are respective direct limits such that  $M^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ ,  $\check{f}_{s,t}^* \supset f_{s,t}^*$  and  $\bigcup_{s < t} \bigcup_{i \in u_s^1} M_i^1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M^*$ .

By condition (4) of the construction, notice that  $M^*$  is a  $(\mu, t)$ -limit model witnessed by  $\langle f_{s,t}^*(M^s) \mid s < t \rangle$ . Hence  $M_t^*$  is an amalgamation base. As in the successor case of the construction in the proof of Theorem II.7.17, we can find  $\bar{M}' = \langle M'_i \mid i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1 \rangle$  and an automorphism  $h$  of  $\check{M}$  such that

- $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  is a nice scattered tower, where  $\bar{a}' = \langle a_i^2 \mid i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1 \rangle$  and  $\bar{N}' = \langle N_i^2 \mid i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1 \rangle$
- $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \restriction \mathfrak{U}_t^1 <^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$
- $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1} M'_i \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_t^1\} = \emptyset$ .
- $h \restriction M^* : M^* \cong M'_{\min\{u_t^1\}}$  and
- $h \restriction M_{\min\{u_t^1\}}^1 = id_{M_{\min\{u_t^1\}}^1}$ .

Let  $M^\dagger$  be a  $(\mu, \gamma_t^\dagger)$ -limit model over  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1} M'_i$  such that  $M_{\min\{u_{t+1}^2\}}^1 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M^\dagger \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ , where  $\gamma_t^\dagger$  is  $\text{otp}(u_t^2)$  if  $u_t^2$  is infinite, otherwise  $\gamma_t^\dagger = \omega$ . Let  $\langle M_\gamma^\dagger \mid \gamma < \gamma_t^\dagger \rangle$  witness that  $M^\dagger$  is a limit model. Since limit models are amalgamation bases, we may choose  $M_{\gamma+1}^\dagger$  to be a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit over  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ .

Applying Corollary II.5.2 to  $(\bigcup_{i \in u_t^1} M_i^1, \bigcup_{i \in \bigcup_{s < t} \mathfrak{U}_s^2 \cup u_t^1} M'_i, M^\dagger)$  and  $\{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_t^1\}$ , there exists an automorphism of  $\check{M}$ ,  $g$ , such that

- $g \restriction \bigcup_{i \in u_t^1} M_i^1 = id_{\bigcup_{i \in u_t^1} M_i^1}$  and
- $g(M^\dagger) \cap \{a_j^1 \mid j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^1 \setminus \mathfrak{U}_t^1\} = \emptyset$ .

Denote by  $\langle i_\gamma \mid \gamma \in \text{otp}(u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1) \rangle$  the increasing enumeration of  $u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1$ . Define

$$M_i^2 := \begin{cases} g(M'_i) & \text{for } i \in u_t^1 \\ g(M_\gamma^\dagger) & \text{for } i = i_\gamma \in u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1 \end{cases}$$

Since  $M^\dagger$  is a limit model witnessed by the  $M_\gamma^\dagger$ 's, we can choose  $a_i^2 \in M_{i+1}^2 \setminus M_i^2$  for all  $i, i+1 \in u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1$ . Since  $M_i^2$  is a limit model for each  $i, i+1 \in u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1$ , we can apply Theorem 7.2 to find  $N_i^2 \preceq_K M_i^2$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i^2/M_i^2)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i^2$  and  $M_i^2$  is universal over  $N_i^2$ .

Define  $f_{s,t} := g \circ h \circ f_{s,t}^* \upharpoonright \bigcup_{i \in u_s^2} M_i^2$  and  $\check{f}_{s,t} := g \circ h \circ f_{s,t}^*$  for all  $s < t$ .

⊣

If we isolate the induction step, we get the following useful fact:

**Corollary II.8.10.** *Suppose  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  lies inside a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model,  $\check{M}$ , that is  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i \prec_K \check{M}$ . If for some  $\mathfrak{U}' \subset_{\text{int}} \mathfrak{U}$ ,  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}'}^*$  is a partial extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  (ie  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U} \cap \beta <^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$ ), then there exist a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $f$ , models  $M'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}+1}$  and  $N'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}+1}$  and an element  $a'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}}$  such that  $f : \bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}'} M'_i \rightarrow \check{M}$ ,  $f \upharpoonright M_j = \text{id}_{M_j}$  for  $j \in \mathfrak{U}'$  and  $(\langle f(M'_i) \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}' \rangle^\wedge \langle M'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}+1} \rangle, \langle a'_i \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}' \rangle^\wedge \langle a'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}+1} \rangle, \langle f(N'_i) \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}' \rangle^\wedge \langle N'_{\sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}'\}+1} \rangle)$  is a partial  $<^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$ .*

## II.9 Reduced Towers are Continuous

In Section II.10 we identify a property (relatively full and continuous) which will guarantee that for a tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$  with this property, we have that  $\bigcup_{i < \alpha} M_i$  is a  $(\mu, \alpha)$ -limit model over  $M_0$  (see Theorem II.10.12). This addresses problem (1) in our construction of an array of models described at the beginning of Section II.8. The first point that (1) breaks down is that  $\langle M_i^{\theta_2} \mid i < \theta_1 \rangle$  need not

be a continuous chain of models, since we do not require towers to be continuous. Shelah and Villaveces introduced the concept of reduced towers in an attempt to capture some continuous towers. Unfortunately, their proof that reduced towers are continuous does not converge. Here we solve this problem. We introduce a strengthening of reduced towers, completely reduced towers, for easier reading.

**Definition II.9.1.** A tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is said to be *reduced* provided that for every  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  with  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \leq^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  we have that for every  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$ ,

$$(*)_i \quad M'_i \cap \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_j = M_i.$$

The following seems to be a strengthening of reduced, but by Proposition II.9.3 it turns out to be equivalent to reduced. We introduce it primarily for expository reasons as it clarifies the proof of Theorem II.9.7. The formal difference between completely reduced and reduced, is that for a tower to be reduced we require every *partial* extension  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}'}^*$  of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  to satisfy  $(*)_i$  for  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}'$ .

**Definition II.9.2.** A tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is said to be *completely reduced* provided that for every  $\zeta \leq \sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}\}$  and every  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta}^*$  with  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta \leq^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  we have that for every  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta$ ,

$$M'_i \cap \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_j = M_i.$$

**Proposition II.9.3.** *If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is reduced, then it is completely reduced.*

*Proof.* Suppose that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is not completely reduced, then there exist a  $\zeta < \sup\{\mathfrak{U}\}$ , a tower  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U} \upharpoonright \zeta}^*$ ,  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta$  and an element  $b$  such that

$$\cdot (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright (\mathfrak{U} \upharpoonright \zeta) \leq^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}') \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot b \in (M'_i \cap \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_j) \setminus M_i.$$

By Lemma II.8.10, there exists a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f$  and a tower  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a}^*, \bar{N}^*) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  such that

- (1)  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \leq^c (\bar{M}^*, \bar{a}^*, \bar{N}^*)$ ,
- (2)  $f : \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M'_i \rightarrow \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_j^*$ ,
- (3)  $f \upharpoonright \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_i = id_{\bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_i}$ ,
- (4) for every  $j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta$ ,  $f(M'_j) = M_j^*$

Notice that by (3) and the fact that  $b \in \bigcup_{j \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta} M_j$ , we have that  $f(b) = b$ . Since  $b \in M'_i$ , we have  $b \in f(M'_i) = M_i^*$ . Thus  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a}^*, \bar{N}^*)$  witnesses that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is not reduced.

⊢

**Corollary II.9.4.** *If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is reduced, then for every  $\zeta < \sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U}\}$ ,  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright \zeta$  is also reduced.*

*Proof.* Immediate from the definitions and Proposition II.9.3.

⊢

If we take a  $<^c$ -increasing and continuous chain of reduced towers with increasing index sets, the union will be reduced. The following proposition appears in [ShVi] for the special case when  $\mathfrak{U} = \{\alpha\}$  for some limit ordinal  $\alpha$  (Theorem 3.1.14 of [ShVi].) We provide the proof here for completeness.

**Fact II.9.5.** *Let  $\langle \mathfrak{U}_\gamma \mid \gamma < \beta \rangle$  be an increasing and continuous sequence of sets of intervals ( $\mathfrak{U}_{\gamma+1}$  is an interval-extension of  $\mathfrak{U}_\gamma$  and if  $\gamma$  is a limit ordinal  $\bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\gamma = \bigcup_{\delta < \gamma} \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\delta$ .) If  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\gamma \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_\gamma}^* \mid \gamma < \beta \rangle$  is  $<^c$ -increasing and continuous sequence of reduced towers, then the union of this sequence of towers is a reduced tower.*

*Proof.* Denote by  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$  the union of the sequence of towers and  $\mathfrak{U}_\beta$  the limit of the intervals. More specifically,  $\mathfrak{U}_\beta$  is a fixed set of intervals such that  $\bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\beta = \bigcup_{\gamma < \beta} \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\gamma$  and for every  $\gamma < \beta$ ,  $\mathfrak{U}_\beta$  is an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}_\gamma$ .  $\bar{M}^\beta = \langle M_i^\beta \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\beta \rangle$  where  $M_i^\beta = \bigcup_{\{\gamma < \beta \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\gamma\}} M_i^\gamma$ .  $\bar{N}^\beta = \langle N_i^{\min\{\gamma \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\gamma\}} \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\beta \rangle$  and  $\bar{a}^\beta = \langle a_i^{\min\{\gamma \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\gamma\}} \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\beta \rangle$

Suppose that it is not reduced. Let  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_\beta}^*$  witness this. Then there exists an  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}_\beta$  and an element  $a$  such that  $a \in (M'_i \cap \bigcup_{j \in \mathfrak{U}_\beta} M_j^\beta) \setminus M_i^\beta$ . There exists  $\gamma < \beta$  such that  $i \in \mathfrak{U}_\gamma$  and there exists  $j \in \mathfrak{U}_\gamma$  such that  $a \in M_j^\gamma$ . Now consider the tower in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}_\gamma}^*$ ,  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \restriction \mathfrak{U}_\gamma$ . Notice that  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \restriction \mathfrak{U}_\gamma$  witnesses that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\gamma$  is not reduced.  $\dashv$

The following proposition will be used in conjunction with Theorem II.9.7 to show that every tower can be properly extended to a continuous tower. It appears in [ShVi] (Theorem 3.1.13) for the particular case of  $\mathfrak{U} = \{\alpha\}$  for limit ordinals  $\alpha$ . John Baldwin has asked for us to elaborate on their proof here. We provide a proof of the more general result with  $\mathfrak{U}$  an arbitrary set of intervals on  $\alpha < \mu^+$ .

**Proposition II.9.6 (Density of reduced towers).** *Let  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  be nice. Fix  $\check{M}$  a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model containing  $\bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}} M_i$ . Then there exists  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  such that*

$$\cdot (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) <^c (\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}),$$

$$\cdot (\bar{M}', \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \text{ is reduced and}$$

$$\cdot \bigcup_{i \in \mathfrak{U}} M'_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}.$$

*Proof.* We first observe that it suffices to find a  $<^c$ -extension,  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$ , of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  that is reduced. If  $(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')$  does not lie inside of  $\check{M}$ , since  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is nice, we

can apply Proposition II.2.37 to find a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f : \bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U}} M'_i \rightarrow \check{M}$  such that  $f \upharpoonright \bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U}} M_i$ . Notice that  $f[(\bar{M}', \bar{a}', \bar{N}')] is as required.$

Suppose for the sake of contradiction that no  $\leq^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathcal{U}}^*$  is reduced. This allows us to construct a  $\leq^c$ -increasing and continuous sequence of towers  $\langle (\bar{M}^\zeta, \bar{a}^\zeta, \bar{N}^\zeta) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathcal{U}}^* \mid \zeta < \mu^+ \rangle$  such that  $(\bar{M}^{\zeta+1}, \bar{a}^{\zeta+1}, \bar{N}^{\zeta+1})$  witnesses that  $(\bar{M}^\zeta, \bar{a}^\zeta, \bar{N}^\zeta)$  is not reduced for  $\zeta > 0$ .

The construction: Since  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is nice, we can apply Theorem II.8.8 to find  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^1$  a  $<^c$  extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$ . By our assumption on  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$ , we know that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^1$  is not reduced.

Suppose that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\zeta$  has been defined. Since it is a  $\leq^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$ , we know it is not reduced. By the definition of reduced towers, there must exist a  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\zeta+1} \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathcal{U}}^*$  a  $\leq^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\zeta$ , witnessing that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\zeta$  is not reduced.

For  $\zeta$  a limit ordinal, let  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\zeta = \bigcup_{\gamma < \zeta} (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\gamma$ . This completes the construction.

For each  $b \in \bigcup_{\zeta < \mu^+, i \in \mathcal{U}} M_i^\zeta$  define

$$i(b) := \min \left\{ i \in \bigcup \mathcal{U} \mid b \in \bigcup_{\zeta \in \mu^+} \bigcup_{\substack{j < i \\ j \in \mathcal{U}}} M_j^\zeta \right\} \text{ and}$$

$$\zeta(b) := \min \left\{ \zeta < \mu^+ \mid b \in M_{i(b)}^\zeta \right\}.$$

$\zeta(\cdot)$  can be viewed as a function from  $\mu^+$  to  $\mu^+$ . Thus there exists a club  $E = \{ \delta < \mu^+ \mid \forall b \in \bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U}} M_i^\delta, \zeta(b) < \delta \}$ . Actually, all we need is for  $E$  to be non-empty.

Fix  $\delta \in E$ . By construction  $(\bar{M}^{\delta+1}, \bar{a}^{\delta+1}, \bar{N}^{\delta+1})$  witnesses the fact that  $(\bar{M}^\delta, \bar{a}^\delta, \bar{N}^\delta)$  is not reduced. So we may fix  $i \in \mathcal{U}$  and  $b \in M_i^{\delta+1} \cap \bigcup_{j \in \mathcal{U}} M_j^\delta$  such that  $b \notin M_i^\delta$ . Since  $b \in M_i^{\delta+1}$ , we have that  $i(b) \leq i$ . Since  $\delta \in E$ , we know that there exists  $\zeta < \delta$  such that  $b \in M_{i(b)}^\zeta$ . Because  $\zeta < \delta$  and  $i(b) < i$ , this implies that  $b \in M_i^\delta$  as well.

This contradicts our choice of  $i$  and  $b$  witnessing the failure of  $(\bar{M}^\delta, \bar{a}^\delta, \bar{N}^\delta)$  to be reduced.  $\dashv$

The following theorem was claimed in [ShVi]. Unfortunately, their proof does not converge. We resolve their problems here.

**Theorem II.9.7 (Reduced towers are continuous).** *For every  $\alpha < \mu^+ < \lambda$  and every set of intervals  $\mathfrak{U}$  on  $\alpha$ , if  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  is reduced, then  $\bar{M}$  is continuous.*

*Proof.* Let  $\mu$  be given. Suppose the claim fails for  $\mu$  and  $\delta$  is the minimal limit ordinal for which it fails. More precisely,  $\delta$  is the minimal element of

$$S = \left\{ \delta < \mu^+ \left| \begin{array}{l} \delta \text{ is a limit ordinal} \\ \text{there exist } \mathfrak{U} \text{ a set of intervals} \\ \text{and a reduced tower } (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^* \text{ such that} \\ \sup\{\cup \mathfrak{U}\} \cap \delta = \delta, \\ \delta \in \cup \mathfrak{U} \text{ and} \\ M_\delta \neq \bigcup_{i \in (\cup \mathfrak{U}) \cap \delta} M_i \end{array} \right. \right\}.$$

Let  $\mathfrak{U}$  be a set of intervals and  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^*$  witness  $\delta \in S$ . Let  $b \in M_\delta \setminus \bigcup_{i \in (\cup \mathfrak{U}) \cap \delta} M_i$  be given. Our goal is to arrive to a contradiction by showing that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is not completely reduced. By Corollary II.9.4, it is enough to show that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright (\delta + 1)$  is not reduced. We will find a  $\leq^c$ -extension  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a} \upharpoonright (\delta + 1), \bar{N} \upharpoonright (\delta + 1))$  of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright (\delta + 1)$  such that  $b \in M_\zeta^*$  for some  $\zeta < \delta$ .

Fix  $\check{M}$  a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit over  $M_\delta$ . We begin by defining by induction on  $\zeta < \delta$  a  $<^c$ -increasing and continuous sequence of reduced towers,  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\zeta \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U} \upharpoonright \delta}^* \mid \zeta < \delta \rangle$ , such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^0 \upharpoonright \delta = (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  and  $M_i^\zeta \prec_K \check{M}$  for all  $\zeta < \delta$  and for all  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta$ . Why is this possible? By the minimality of  $\delta$  and Corollary II.9.4,  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^0 \upharpoonright \delta$  is continuous. Therefore, it is nice. This allows us to apply Proposition

II.9.6 to get a reduced extension  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^1$  of length  $\delta$  inside  $\check{M}$ . Similarly we can find reduced extensions at successor stages. When  $\zeta$  is a limit ordinal, we take unions which will be reduced by Fact II.9.5.

Consider the diagonal sequence  $\langle M_\zeta^\zeta \mid \zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \text{ and } \zeta < \delta \rangle$ . Notice that this is a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing sequence of amalgamation bases. For  $\zeta < \zeta' \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta$ , we have that  $M_{\zeta'}^{\zeta'}$  is universal over  $M_\zeta^\zeta$ . Why? From the definition of  $<^c$ ,  $M_{\zeta'}^{\zeta'}$  is universal over  $M_\zeta^\zeta$ . Since  $M_{\zeta'}^{\zeta'} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_{\zeta'}^{\zeta'}$ , we have that  $M_{\zeta'}^{\zeta'}$  is universal over  $M_\zeta^\zeta$ .

By minimality of  $\delta$ , the sequence  $\langle M_\zeta^\zeta \mid \zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \text{ and } \zeta < \delta \rangle$  is continuous:

$$\text{for } \zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta \text{ with } \zeta = \sup\{\bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \zeta\}, \quad M_\zeta^\zeta = \bigcup_{\xi < \zeta} M_\xi^\xi.$$

Thus  $\bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta$  is a limit model. Since  $\bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta$  and  $M_\delta$  are amalgamation bases inside  $\check{M}$ , we can fix  $M_\delta^\delta \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$  a  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limit model universal over both  $\bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta$  and  $M_\delta$ . ( $\omega$  was an arbitrary choice, we only need that  $M_\delta^\delta$  be a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit for some limit  $\theta < \mu^+$ .)

Because  $\bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta$  is a limit model, we can apply Fact II.7.6 to  $\text{ga-tp}(b / \bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta, M_\delta^\delta)$ . Let  $\xi \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta$  be such that

$$(*)_1 \quad \text{ga-tp}(b / \bigcup_{\zeta \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} M_\zeta^\zeta, M_\delta^\delta) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

We choose by induction on  $i \leq \delta$  a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous chain of models  $\langle N_i^* \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^* \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1) \rangle$  and an increasing and continuous sequence of  $\mathcal{K}$ -mappings  $\langle h_i \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1) \rangle$  satisfying

- (1)  $h_i : M_i^i \rightarrow N_i^*$  for  $i < \delta$
- (2)  $h_{i+1}(a_i) \notin N_i^*$  for  $i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1)$
- (3)  $N_i^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$

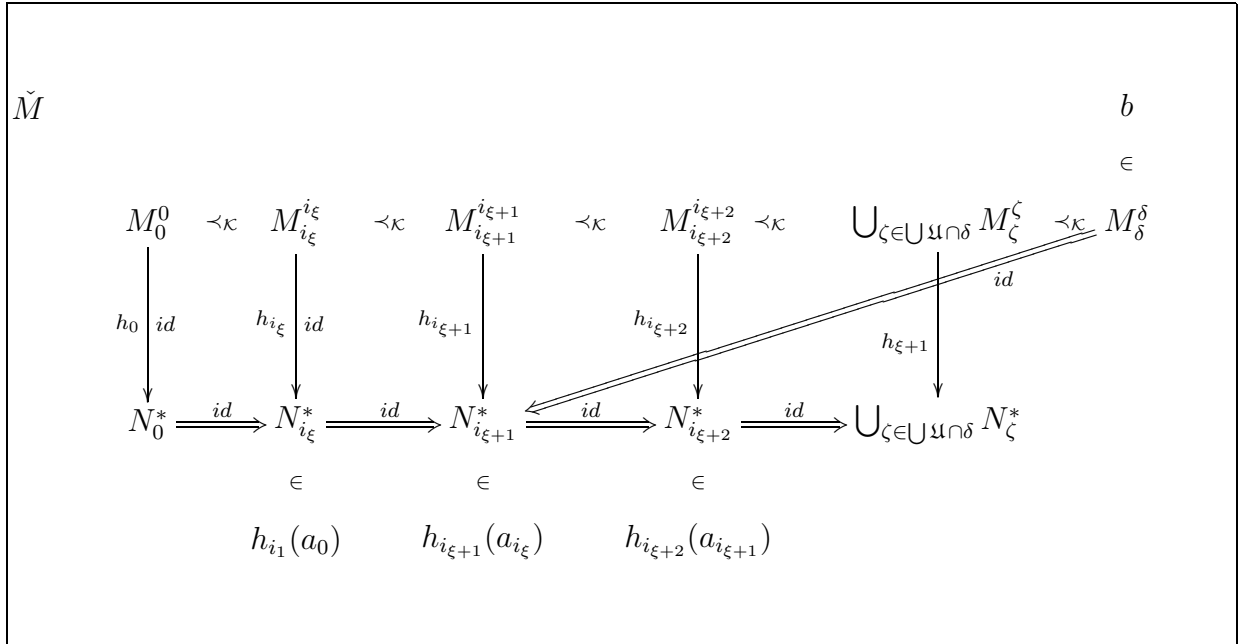


- (4)  $N_i^*$  is universal over  $N_j^*$  for  $j < i$
- (5)  $M_\delta^\delta \subseteq N_i^*$  for  $i > \xi$
- (6)  $h_\xi = id_{M_\xi^\xi}$ ,
- (7)  $\text{ga-tp}(b/h_i(M_i^i))$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_\xi^\xi$  for  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta$  with  $i \geq \xi$  and
- (8)  $\text{ga-tp}(h_{i+1}(a_i)/N_i^*)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $h_i(N_i)$  for  $i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta+1)$ .

Fix an increasing enumeration of  $\bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta+1) = \{i_\zeta \mid \zeta \leq \alpha\}$  for some  $\alpha \leq \delta$ . We construct this sequence of models and sequence of mappings by induction on  $\zeta \leq \alpha$ .

Let  $\xi^*$  be such that  $\xi = i_{\xi^*}$ .

We depict the construction below. The inverse image of the sequence of  $N$ 's will form the required  $<^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright (\delta+1)$ .



$\zeta \leq \xi^*$ : Set  $N_{i_\zeta}^* := M_{i_\zeta}^{i_\zeta}$  and  $h_{i_\zeta} = id_{M_{i_\zeta}^{i_\zeta}}$ .

$\zeta > \xi^*$  is a limit ordinal and  $i_\zeta = \sup\{i_\gamma \mid \gamma < \zeta\}$ : To maintain continuity,  $N_{i_\zeta}^* := \bigcup_{\gamma < \zeta} N_{i_\gamma}^*$  and  $h_{i_\zeta} := \bigcup_{\gamma < \zeta} h_{i_\gamma}$ . Condition (7) follows from the induction hypothesis and Fact II.7.7.

$\zeta > \xi^*$  is a limit ordinal with  $i_\zeta \neq \sup\{i_\gamma \mid \gamma < \zeta\}$  or  $\zeta = \gamma + 1$  with  $i_\zeta \neq i_\gamma + 1$ : Let  $N^* := \bigcup_{\beta < \zeta} N_{i_\beta}^*$  and  $M^* := \bigcup_{\beta < \zeta} M_{i_\beta}^{i_\beta}$ . Let  $N_{i_\zeta}^{**} \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  be a universal extension of  $N^*$  and  $M_\delta^\delta$  with  $N_{i_\zeta}^{**} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . This is possible because either  $N^* = N_{i_\beta}^*$  for some  $\beta$  and is therefore a limit model by the induction hypothesis, or continuity and condition (4) guarantee that  $N^*$  is a limit model witnessed by  $\langle N_{i_\beta}^* \mid \beta < \zeta \rangle$ .  $N_{i_\zeta}^{**}$  will be a first approximation for our definition of  $N_{i_\zeta}^*$ . To get condition (7) notice that by the induction hypothesis we have for every  $\beta < \zeta$ ,

$$\text{ga-tp}(b/h_\beta(M_{i_\beta}^{i_\beta})) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

With an application of Fact II.7.7, we can conclude that

$$\text{ga-tp}(b/M^*) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

By Theorem II.7.9 we can find  $f \in \text{Aut}_{\bigcup_{\beta < \zeta} h_{i_\beta}(M_{i_\beta}^{i_\beta})}(\check{M})$  such that

$$\text{ga-tp}(b/f(N_{i_\zeta}^{**})) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

Let  $N_{i_\zeta}^* := f(N_{i_\zeta}^{**})$  and  $h_{i_\zeta} := f$ . Notice that we do not have to concern ourselves with condition (8) since  $i_\zeta \neq i_\gamma + 1$ . It is routine to verify that  $N_{i_\zeta}^*$  and  $h_{i_\zeta}$  meet the other conditions.

$\zeta = \gamma + 1 > \xi^*$  with  $i_\zeta = i_\gamma + 1$ : Let  $\check{h}_{i_\gamma} \in \text{Aut}(\check{M})$  extend  $h_{i_\gamma}$ . Let  $N^{**} \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^*$  be a universal extension of  $N_{i_\gamma}^*$ ,  $\check{h}_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$  and  $M_\delta^\delta$  with  $N^{**} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . This will be our first approximation to  $N_{i_\zeta}^*$ .

We will first work towards condition (2). By Corollary II.5.2, applied to  $h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ ,  $h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ ,  $N^{**}$  and the collection of elements  $(M_\delta^\delta \cup N_{i_\gamma}^*) \setminus h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ , we can find a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mapping  $f$  such that

- $f : \check{h}_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\zeta}) \rightarrow N^{**}$
- $f \upharpoonright h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) = id_{h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})}$  and
- $f(\check{h}_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\zeta})) \cap (M_\delta^\delta \cup N_{i_\gamma}^*) \setminus h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$  in particular  $f \circ \check{h}_{i_\gamma}(a_j) \notin N_{i_\gamma}^*$  for  $j \geq i_\gamma$ .

Now that we have met condition (2), we focus on meeting condition (8) without mapping  $a_{i_\gamma}$  into  $N_{i_\gamma}^*$ . By the definition of towers, we have

$$\text{ga-tp}(a_{i_\gamma}/M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}.$$

By invariance we have that

$$\text{ga-tp}(f \circ \check{h}_{i_\gamma}(a_{i_\gamma})/h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}).$$

By the extension property for non-splitting (Theorem II.7.9), we can find  $g \in \text{Aut}_{h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})}(\check{M})$  such that

$$(*)_2 \quad \text{ga-tp}(g \circ f \circ \check{h}_{i_\gamma}(a_{i_\gamma})/N_{i_\gamma}^*) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}).$$

Let  $g' := g \circ f \circ \check{h}_{i_\gamma}$ . We need to verify that by applying  $g'$  our work towards condition (2) is not lost:

**Claim II.9.8.**  $g'(a_{i_\gamma}) \notin N_{i_\gamma}^*$ .

*Proof.* Since  $h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$  is universal over  $h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ , there exists a  $\prec_K$ -mapping  $H : N_{i_\gamma}^* \rightarrow h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$  with  $H \upharpoonright h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) = id_{h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})}$ . By definition of  $g'$  and  $(*)_2$ , we have  $\text{ga-tp}(g'(a_{i_\gamma})/N_{i_\gamma}^*)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $h_{i_\gamma}(N_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ . Thus

$$(*)_3 \quad \text{ga-tp}(g'(a_{i_\gamma})/H(N_{i_\gamma}^*)) = \text{ga-tp}(H(g'(a_{i_\gamma}))/H(N_{i_\gamma}^*)).$$

Suppose for the sake of contradiction that  $g'(a_{i_\gamma}) \in N_{i_\gamma}^*$ . Then an application of  $H$  gives us that  $H(g'(a_{i_\gamma})) \in H(N_{i_\gamma}^*)$ . Thus by the above equality of types  $(*)_3$ , we have that  $g'(a_{i_\gamma}) \in H(N_{i_\gamma}^*)$ . Since  $\text{rg}(H) \subseteq h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$  we get that  $g'(a_{i_\gamma}) \in h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ .

Since  $a_{i_\gamma} \notin M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}$  and since  $g' \upharpoonright M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma} = h_{i_\gamma}$ , an application of  $g'$  gives us  $g(a_{i_\gamma}) \notin h_{i_\gamma}(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})$ , contradicting the previous paragraph.  $\dashv$

We now tackle condition (7). Fix  $N_{i_\zeta}^* \prec_\kappa \check{M}$  such that it is universal over  $g'(M_{i_\zeta}^{i_\zeta})$ ,  $N_{i_\gamma}^*$  and  $N^{**}$ . By monotonicity of non-splitting  $(*)_1$  implies

$$\text{ga-tp}(b/M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

By invariance we get

$$\text{ga-tp}(g'(b)/g'(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

By the extension property for non-splitting, we can find  $k \in \text{Aut}_{g'(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})} \check{M}$  such that

$$\text{ga-tp}(k \circ g'(b)/N_{i_\zeta}^*) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

Set  $h_{i_\zeta} := k \circ g' \upharpoonright N_{i_\zeta}^*$ . Since  $k \upharpoonright g'(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) = \text{id}_{g'(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma})}$ , conditions (2) and (8) are met by  $h_{i_\zeta}$ . This completes the construction of our sequences  $\langle N_i^* \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1) \rangle$  and  $\langle h_i \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1) \rangle$ .

We now argue that the construction of these sequences is enough to find a  $<^c$ -extension,  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a} \upharpoonright (\delta + 1), \bar{N} \upharpoonright (\delta + 1))$ , of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright (\delta + 1)$  such that  $b \in M_\zeta^*$  for some  $\zeta < \delta$ . We will be defining  $\bar{M}^*$  to be pre-image of  $\bar{N}^*$ . The following claim allows us to choose the pre-image so that  $M_\zeta^*$  contains  $b$  for some  $\zeta < \delta$ .

**Claim II.9.9.** *There exists  $h \in \text{Aut}(\check{M})$  extending  $\bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta} h_i$  such that  $h(b) = b$ .*

*Proof.* Notice that  $i_\alpha = \delta$ . Consider the increasing and continuous sequence  $\langle h_\delta(M_{i_\gamma}^{i_\gamma}) \mid \gamma < \alpha \rangle$ . By invariance, when  $i < j$ ,  $h_\delta(M_j^j)$  is universal over  $h_\delta(M_i^i)$  and  $h_\delta(M_i^i)$  is a limit model. By construction we have that for every  $i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap \delta$ ,

$$\text{ga-tp}(b/h_\delta(M_i^i)) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

This allows us to apply Fact II.7.7, to  $\text{ga-tp}(b/\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} h_\delta(M_i^i))$  to conclude that

$$(*)_4 \quad \text{ga-tp}(b/\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} h_\delta(M_i^i)) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

Notice that  $\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i$  is a limit model witnessed by  $\langle M_j^j \mid j \in \bigcup \mathcal{U} \cap i \rangle$ . So we can apply Proposition II.2.36 and extend  $\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} h_i$  to an automorphism  $h^*$  of  $\check{M}$ . We will first show that

$$(*)_5 \quad \text{ga-tp}(b/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M}) = \text{ga-tp}(h^*(b)/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M}).$$

By invariance and our choice of  $\xi$  we have that

$$\text{ga-tp}(h^*(b)/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M}) \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_\xi^\xi.$$

We will use non-splitting to show that these two types are equal  $(*)_5$ . In accordance with the definition of splitting, let  $N^1 = \bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i$ ,  $N^2 = h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i)$  and  $p = \text{ga-tp}(b/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M})$ . By  $(*)_4$ , we have that  $p \upharpoonright N^2 = h^*(p \upharpoonright N^1)$ . In other words,  $\text{ga-tp}(b/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M}) = \text{ga-tp}(h^*(b)/h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i), \check{M})$ , as desired.

From this equality of types  $(*)_5$ , we can find an automorphism  $f$  of  $\check{M}$  such that  $f(h^*(b)) = b$  and  $f \upharpoonright h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i) = \text{id}_{h^*(\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i^i)}$ . Notice that  $h := f \circ h^*$  satisfies the conditions of the claim.

⊣

Now that we have a automorphism  $h$  fixing  $b$  and  $\bigcup_{i \in \mathcal{U} \cap \delta} M_i$ , we can define  $\bar{M}^*$  as the pre-image of  $\bar{N}^*$ . For each  $i \leq \delta$  define  $M_i^* := h^{-1}(N_i^*)$ . Let  $\zeta := \min\{i \in \mathcal{U} \mid i > \xi + 1\}$ . Notice that since  $\delta = \sup\{\mathcal{U} \cap \delta\}$  and  $\delta > \xi$ , we have that  $\zeta < \delta$ . Let  $\mathcal{U}^* = \mathcal{U} \cap (\delta + 1)$ .

**Claim II.9.10.**  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a} \upharpoonright \bigcup \mathcal{U}^*, \bar{N} \upharpoonright \mathcal{U}^*)$  is a  $\leq^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \upharpoonright \bigcup \mathcal{U}^*$  such that  $b \in M_\zeta^*$ .

*Proof.* By construction  $b \in M_\delta^\delta \subseteq N_\zeta^*$ . Since  $h(b) = b$ , this implies  $b \in M_\zeta^*$ . To verify that we have a  $\leq^c$ -extension we need to show for  $i \in \mathfrak{U}^*$ :

- i.  $M_i^* = M_i$  or  $M_i^*$  is universal over  $M_i$
- ii.  $a_j \notin M_i^*$  for  $j \in \mathfrak{U}^*$  with  $j \geq i$  and
- iii.  $\text{ga-tp}(a_i/M_i^*)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$  whenever  $i, i+1 \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^*$ .

Item i. follows from the fact that  $M_i^i$  is universal over  $M_i$  and  $M_i^i \prec_\kappa M_i^*$ . Condition (2) of the construction of  $\langle N_i^* \mid i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \cap (\delta + 1) \rangle$  guarantees that for  $j \geq i$ ,  $h(a_j) \notin N_i^*$ . Thus for  $j \geq i$ ,  $a_j \notin M_i^*$ . iii follows from condition (8) of the construction and invariance.  $\dashv$

Notice that  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a} \restriction \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^*, \bar{N} \restriction \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^*)$  witnesses that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \restriction \bigcup \mathfrak{U}^*$  is not reduced. This gives us a contradiction and completes the proof of the theorem.  $\dashv$

## II.10 Relatively Full Towers

We begin this section by recalling a definition of *strong types* from [ShVi].

**Definition II.10.1 (Definition 3.2.1 of [ShVi]).** For  $M$  a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit model,

(1) Let

$$\mathfrak{St}(M) := \left\{ (p, N) \left| \begin{array}{l} N \prec_\kappa M; \\ N \text{ is a } (\mu, \theta) - \text{limit model}; \\ M \text{ is universal over } N; \\ p \in \text{ga-S}(M) \text{ is non-algebraic (not realized in } M) \text{ and} \\ p \text{ does not } \mu - \text{split over } N. \end{array} \right. \right\}$$

and

- (2) For types  $(p_l, N_l) \in \mathfrak{St}(M)$  ( $l = 1, 2$ ), we say  $(p_1, N_1) \sim (p_2, N_2)$  iff for every  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  extending  $M$  there is a  $q \in S(M')$  extending both  $p_1$  and  $p_2$  such that  $q$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_1$  and  $q$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_2$ .

**Notation II.10.2.** Suppose  $M \prec_K M'$  are amalgamation bases of cardinality  $\mu$ . For  $(p, N) \in \mathfrak{St}(M')$ , if  $M$  is universal over  $N$ , we denote the restriction  $(p, N) \upharpoonright M \in \mathfrak{St}(M')$  to be  $(p \upharpoonright M, N)$ .

If we write  $(p, N) \upharpoonright M$ , we mean that  $(p, N)$  is a strong type over  $M'$  (ie  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ ) and  $M$  is universal over  $N$ .

Notice that  $\sim$  is an equivalence relation on  $\mathfrak{St}(M)$ .  $\sim$  is not necessarily the identity. If non-splitting were a transitive relation, then  $\sim$  would be the identity. Not having transitivity of non-splitting is one of the difficulties of this work. For instance, the proof of Fact II.7.7 would be easy if we had transitivity. Even in the first order situation, splitting is not transitive. This is one of the features of non-forking which makes it more attractive than non-splitting.

**Lemma II.10.3.** *Given  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ , and  $(p, N), (p', N') \in \mathfrak{St}(M)$ . Let  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  be a universal extension of  $M$ . To show that  $(p, N) \sim (p', N')$  it suffices to find  $q \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  such that  $q$  extends  $p$  and  $p'$  and  $q$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$  and  $N'$ .*

*Proof.* Suppose  $q \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  extends both  $p$  and  $p'$  and does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$  and  $N'$ . Let  $M^* \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  be an extension of  $M$ . By universality of  $M'$ , there exists  $f : M^* \rightarrow M'$  such that  $f \upharpoonright M = \text{id}_M$ . Consider  $f^{-1}(q)$ . It extends  $p$  and  $p'$  and does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$  and  $N'$  by invariance. Thus  $(p, N) \sim (p', N')$ .  $\dashv$

The following appears as a Fact 3.2.2(3) in [ShVi]. We provide a proof here for completeness.

**Fact II.10.4.** *For  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$ ,  $|\mathfrak{St}(M)/\sim| \leq \mu$ .*

*Proof.* Suppose for the sake of contradiction that  $|\mathfrak{St}(M)/\sim| \geq \mu$ .

Let  $\{(p_i, N_i) \in \mathfrak{St}(M) \mid i < \mu^+\}$  be pairwise non-equivalent. By stability (Fact II.2.21) and the pigeon-hole principle, there exist  $p \in S(M)$  and  $I \subset \mu^+$  such that  $i \in I$  implies  $p_i = p$ . Set  $p := \text{ga-tp}(a/M)$ .

Let  $\check{M}$  be a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model containing  $M \cup a$ . Fix  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  a universal extension of  $M$  inside  $\check{M}$ . We will show that there are  $\geq \mu^+$  types over  $M'$ . This will provide us with a contradiction since  $\mathcal{K}$  is stable in  $\mu$ .

For each  $i \in I$ , by the extension property for non-splitting (Theorem II.7.9), there exists  $f_i \in \text{Aut}_M \check{M}$  such that

- $\text{ga-tp}(f_i(a)/M')$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$  and
- $\text{ga-tp}(f_i(a)/M')$  extends  $\text{ga-tp}(a/M)$ .

**Claim II.10.5.** *For  $i \neq j \in I$  we have that  $\text{ga-tp}(f_i(a)/M') \neq \text{ga-tp}(f_j(a)/M')$*

*Proof.* Otherwise  $\text{ga-tp}(f_i(a)/M')$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_i$  and does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_j$ . By Lemma II.10.3, this implies that  $(p, N_i) \sim (p, N_j)$  contradicting our choice of non-equivalent strong types.

⊥

This completes the proof as  $\{\text{ga-tp}(f_i(a)/M') \mid i \in I\}$  is a set of  $\mu^+$  distinct types over  $M'$ .

⊥

We can then consider towers which are saturated with respect to strong types (from  $\mathfrak{St}(M)$ ). These towers are called relatively full (see Definition II.10.7.)

**Remark II.10.6.** When  $\alpha$  and  $\delta$  are ordinals,  $\alpha \times \delta$  with the lexicographical ordering  $(<_{lex})$ , is well ordered. Recall that  $\text{otp}(\alpha \times \delta, <_{lex}) = \delta \cdot \alpha$  where  $\cdot$  is ordinal multiplication. We will identify  $\alpha \times \delta$  with the interval of ordinals  $[0, \delta \cdot \alpha)$ .



**Definition II.10.7.** Let  $\mathfrak{U} = \{\alpha \times \delta\}$  for some limit ordinals  $\alpha, \delta < \mu^+$ . Let  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$  be such that  $\bar{M}^\gamma$  is a sequence of limit models  $(\langle M_{\beta,i}^\gamma \mid (\beta, i) \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U} \rangle)$  with  $M_{\beta,i}^{\gamma+1}$  universal over  $M_{\beta,i}^\gamma$  for all  $(\beta, i) \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$  and  $\theta$  a limit ordinal.

A tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^\theta$  is said to be *full relative to*  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$  iff for all  $(\beta, i) \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}$

- (1)  $M_{\beta,i} = \bigcup_{\gamma < \theta} M_{\beta,i}^\gamma$  and
- (2) for all  $(p, N^*) \in \mathfrak{St}(M_{\beta,i})$  with  $N^* = M_{\beta,i}^\gamma$  for some  $\gamma < \theta$ , there is a  $j < \delta$  such that  $(\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}), N_{\beta+1,j}) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i} \sim (p, N^*)$ .

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc}
M_{0,0}^0 & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,i}^0 & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \\
\Downarrow id & & \Downarrow id & \\
M_{0,0}^\gamma & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,i}^\gamma & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \\
\Downarrow id & & \Downarrow id & \\
M_{0,0}^{\gamma+1} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,i}^{\gamma+1} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \\
\Downarrow id & & \Downarrow id & \\
M_{0,0} = \bigcup_{\gamma < \theta} M_{0,0}^\gamma & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,i} = \bigcup_{\gamma < \theta} M_{\beta,i}^\gamma & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots
\end{array}$$

**Notation II.10.8.** We say that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^\theta$  is *relatively full* iff there exists  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$  as in Definition II.10.7 such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$ .

**Remark II.10.9.** A strengthening (full towers) of Definition II.10.7 appears in [ShVi] (see Definition 3.2.3 of their paper). Consider the equivalence

$$(*) \quad \forall M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am} \text{ and } \forall (p, N), (p', N') \in \mathfrak{St}(M) \ (p, N) \sim (p', N') \text{ iff } p = p'.$$

(\*) implies that relatively full towers are full. However we do not know that (\*) holds. We introduce relatively full towers because we cannot guarantee the existence

of full towers. The existence of relatively full towers is derived in the proof of the uniqueness of limit models in the following section.

**Remark II.10.10.** If  $(p, N) \sim (p', N')$ , then necessarily  $p = p'$ .

The following proposition is immediate from the definition of relative fullness.

**Proposition II.10.11.** *Let  $\alpha$  and  $\delta$  be limit ordinals  $< \mu^+$ . Set  $\mathfrak{U} := \{\alpha \times \delta\}$ . If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^\theta$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$ , then for every limit ordinal  $\beta < \alpha$ , we have that the restriction  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \restriction \beta \times \delta$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \restriction \beta \times \delta \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$ .*

The following theorem is proved in [ShVi] for full towers (Theorem 3.2.4 of their work). The proof here is similar to Shelah and Villaveces' argument.

**Theorem II.10.12.** *Let  $\alpha$  be an ordinal  $< \mu^+$  such that  $\alpha = \mu \cdot \alpha$ . Suppose  $\mathfrak{U} = \{\alpha \times \delta\}$  for some  $\delta < \mu^+$ . If  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}}^\theta$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \theta \rangle$  and  $\bar{M}$  is continuous, then  $M := \bigcup_{i \in \bigcup \mathfrak{U}} M_i$  is a  $(\mu, \text{cf}(\alpha))$ -limit model over  $M_0$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $M'$  be a  $(\mu, \alpha)$ -limit over  $M_0$  witnessed by  $\langle M'_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$ . Since  $M_0$  is an amalgamation base, we can assume that  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model over  $M_0$  such that  $M, M' \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \check{M}$ . We will construct a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding from  $M$  into  $M'$ . For each  $i < \alpha$  we can identify the universe of  $M'_i$  with  $\mu(1 + i)$ . Notice that since  $\alpha = \mu\alpha$ , we have that  $i \in M'_{i+1}$  for every  $i < \alpha$ .

Now we define by induction on  $i < \alpha$   $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $\langle h_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  such that

- (1)  $h_i : M_{i,j} \rightarrow M'_{i+1}$  for some  $j < \delta$
- (2)  $\langle h_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  is increasing and continuous and
- (3)  $i \in \text{rg}(h_{i+1})$ .

For  $i = 0$  take  $h_0 = \text{id}_{M_0}$ . For  $i$  a limit ordinal let  $h_i = \bigcup_{j < i} h_j$ .



By (\*\*), there exist  $M^* \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  a  $\mathcal{K}$ -substructure of  $\check{M}$  containing  $M_{i,j}$  and  $\mathcal{K}$ -mappings  $f_a : h'(M_{i+1,j'+1}) \rightarrow M^*$  and  $f_i : M'_{i+2} \rightarrow M^*$  such that  $f_a(h'(a_{i+1,j'})) = f_i(i)$  and  $f_a \upharpoonright h_i(M_{i,j}) = f_i \upharpoonright h_i(M_{i,j}) = id_{h_i(M_{i,j})}$ . Since  $M'_{i+2}$  is universal over  $M'_{i+1}$ , it is also universal over  $h_i(M_{i,j})$ . So we may assume that  $M^* = M'_{i+2}$ . Since  $\check{M}$  is a  $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model, we can extend  $f_a$  and  $f_i$  to automorphisms of  $\check{M}$ , say  $\check{f}_a$  and  $\check{f}_i$ . Let  $h_{i+1} : M_{i+1,j'+1} \rightarrow M'_{i+2}$  be defined as  $\check{f}_i^{-1} \circ \check{f}_a \circ h'$ . Notice that  $h_{i+1}(a_{i+1,j'}) = i$ .

Let  $h := \bigcup_{i < \alpha} h_i$ . Clearly  $h : M \rightarrow M'$ . To see that  $h$  is an isomorphism, notice that condition (3) of the construction forces  $h$  to be surjective.

⊣

## II.11 Uniqueness of Limit Models

Recall the running assumptions:

- (1)  $\mathcal{K}$  is an abstract elementary class,
- (2)  $\mathcal{K}$  has no maximal models,
- (3)  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in some  $\lambda > LS(\mathcal{K})$ ,
- (4) GCH and  $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S_{cf(\mu)}^{\mu^+})$  holds for every cardinal  $\mu < \lambda$ .

Under these assumptions, we can prove the uniqueness of limit models using the results from Sections II.8, II.9 and II.10. This is a solution to a conjecture from [ShVi].

Notice that in the proof of the  $<^c$ -extension property for nice towers, there is some freedom in choosing the new  $a'_i$ s. We will use this corollary in the inductive step of the construction in Theorem II.11.2 in order to produce a relatively full tower.

**Corollary II.11.1.** *Let  $\mathfrak{U}^1$  and  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  be sets of intervals of ordinals  $< \mu^+$  such that  $\mathfrak{U}^2$  is an interval extension of  $\mathfrak{U}^1$ . Let  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^1}^*$  be a nice scattered tower. Let  $\{i_\gamma \mid \gamma < \text{otp}(u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1)\}$  be an enumeration of  $u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1$ . Fix  $\{(p, N)^\gamma \mid \gamma < \mu\}$  with  $\{(p, N)^\gamma \mid \gamma < \mu\} = \bigcup_{j \in u_t^1} \mathfrak{St}(M_j^1)$ . We denote  $(p^\gamma, N^\gamma)$  as  $(p, N)^\gamma$ .*

*Then there exists a nice scattered tower  $(\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^2}^*$  such that  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1) <^c (\bar{M}^2, \bar{a}^2, \bar{N}^2)$  and for every  $t < \alpha^1$  and for every  $\gamma < \min\{\text{otp}(u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1), \mu\}$  we have that*

$$\cdot (p, N)^\gamma \sim (\text{ga-tp}(a_{i_\gamma}^2 / \text{dom}(p^\gamma), N_{i_\gamma}^2) \text{ and}$$

$$\cdot N_{i_\gamma}^2 = N^\gamma.$$

*(Notice that  $\bar{N}^1 = \bar{N}^2 \upharpoonright \mathfrak{U}^1$  by the definition of  $<^c$ ).*

*Proof.* WLOG we may assume  $\mathfrak{U}^1 = \{u_t^1 \mid t < \alpha^1\}$  and  $\mathfrak{U}^2 = \{u_t^2 \mid t < \alpha^1\}$  are as in the proof of Theorem II.8.8. Let  $t < \alpha^1$  be given. Refer back to stage  $t$  of the construction in the proof of Theorem II.8.8. At stage  $t$  of the construction, after we have defined  $\langle M_i^2 \mid i \in u_t^2 \rangle$ , notice that our choice of  $a_{i_\gamma}^2$  was arbitrary. Here we make a more selective choice. Let  $\gamma < \min\{\text{otp}(u_t^2 \setminus u_t^1), \mu\}$  be given. Consider  $(p, N)^\gamma \in \mathfrak{St}(M_j^1)$ . So  $M_j^1$  is universal over  $N^\gamma$ . Also notice that  $M_{i_\gamma}^2$  is universal over  $M_j^1$  because  $M_j^2$  is universal over  $M_j^1$  and  $M_{i_\gamma}^2$  contains  $M_j^2$ . Since  $M_{i_\gamma}^2$  is universal over  $M_j^1$ , an application of Theorem II.7.9, gives us  $p' \in \text{ga-S}(M_{i_\gamma}^2)$  extending  $p^\gamma$  such that  $p'$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N^\gamma$ . Since  $M_{i_{\gamma+1}}^2$  is universal over  $M_{i_\gamma}^2$ , there exists  $a' \in M_{i_{\gamma+1}}^2$  realizing  $p'$ . Set  $a_{i_\gamma}^2 := a'$  and  $N_{i_\gamma}^2 := N^\gamma$ .

—

Abusing notation, we will apply Corollary II.11.1 in the next theorem where the index sets are ordered pairs of ordinals instead of ordinals.

**Theorem II.11.2 (Uniqueness of Limit Models).** *Let  $\mu$  be a cardinal  $\theta_1, \theta_2$  limit ordinals such that  $\theta_1, \theta_2 < \mu^+ \leq \lambda$ . If  $M_1$  and  $M_2$  are  $(\mu, \theta_1)$  and  $(\mu, \theta_2)$  limit models over  $M$ , respectively, then there exists an isomorphism  $f : M_1 \cong M_2$  such that  $f \restriction M = id_M$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  be given. By Fact II.2.32, it is enough to show that there exists a  $\theta_2$  such that for every  $\theta_1$  a limit ordinal  $< \mu^+$ , we have that a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model over  $M$  is isomorphic to a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model over  $M$ . Take  $\theta_2$  such that  $\theta_2 = \mu\theta_1$ . Fix  $\theta_1$  a limit ordinal  $< \mu^+$ . By Fact II.2.33, we may assume that  $\theta_1$  is regular. Using Fact II.2.32 again, it is enough to construct a model  $M^*$  which is simultaneously a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model over  $M$  and a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model over  $M$ .

The idea is to build a (scattered) array of models such that at some point in the array, we will find a model which is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit model witnessed by its height in the array and is a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model witnessed by its horizontal position in the array, relative fullness and continuity. To guarantee that we have continuous towers, we will be constructing the array with reduced towers. We will define a chain of length  $\mu^+$  of reduced, scattered towers while increasing the index set of the towers in order to realize strong types as we proceed with the goal of producing many relatively full rows.

We will consider the index set  $\mathfrak{U}^\alpha$  at stage  $0 < \alpha < \mu^+$  where

$$\mathfrak{U}^\alpha := \{u_\beta^\alpha \mid \beta < \alpha\},$$

where the disjoint intervals of  $\mathfrak{U}^\alpha$  are  $u_\beta^\alpha := \{(\beta, i) \mid i < \mu\alpha\}$  with  $(\beta, i)$  denoting an ordered pair (not an interval). The ordering on  $\bigcup \mathfrak{U}^\alpha$  is the lexicographical order. Notice that for  $\alpha < \alpha' < \mu^+$ , we have  $\mathfrak{U}^\alpha \subset_{int} \mathfrak{U}^{\alpha'}$ . We start our construction at  $\alpha = 1$  (as opposed to  $\alpha = 0$ ) in order to avoid the "empty" tower.

Define by induction on  $0 < \alpha < \mu^+$  the  $<^c$ -increasing sequence of scattered towers,  $\langle (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\alpha \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{A}^\alpha}^* \mid \alpha < \mu^+ \rangle$ , such that

- (1)  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_{0,0}^\alpha$ ,
- (2)  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\alpha$  is reduced,
- (3)  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\alpha := \bigcup_{\beta < \alpha} (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$  for  $\alpha$  a limit ordinal and
- (4) In successor stages in new intervals of length  $\mu$ , put in representatives of all  $\mathfrak{St}$ -types from the previous stages. More formally, if  $(p, N) \in \mathfrak{St}(M_{\beta,i}^\alpha)$  for  $i < \mu\alpha$  and  $\beta < \alpha$ , there exists  $j \in [\mu\alpha, \mu(\alpha + 1)]$  such that

$$(p, N) \sim (\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\alpha+1}), N_j) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^\alpha.$$

This construction is possible:

$\alpha = 1$ : We can choose  $\bar{M}^* = \langle M_i^* \mid i < \mu \rangle$  to be an arbitrary  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$  increasing sequence of limit models of cardinality  $\mu$  with  $M_0^* = M$ . For each  $i < \mu$ , fix  $a_{0,i}^1 \in M_{i+1}^* \setminus M_i^*$ . Now consider  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{0,i}^1/M_i^*)$ . Since  $M_i^*$  is a limit model, we can apply Fact II.7.6 to fix  $N_{0,i}^1 \in \mathcal{K}_\mu^{am}$  such that  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{0,i}^1/M_i^*)$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{0,i}^1$  and  $M_i^*$  is universal over  $N_{0,i}^1$ . Let  $\bar{a}^1 := \langle a_{0,i}^1 \mid i < \mu \rangle$  and  $\bar{N}^1 = \langle N_{0,i}^1 \mid i < \mu \rangle$ . By Theorem II.9.6, there exists a sequence of models,  $\bar{M}^1$ , such that  $(\bar{M}^1, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1)$

- is a member of  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{A}^1}^*$ ,
- is a  $<^c$ -extension of  $(\bar{M}^*, \bar{a}^1, \bar{N}^1)$  and
- is reduced.

$\alpha$  a limit ordinal: Take  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\alpha := \bigcup_{\beta < \alpha} (\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$ .

$\alpha = \beta + 1$ : Suppose that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$  has been defined. By Fact II.10.4, for every

$\gamma < \beta$ , we can enumerate  $\bigcup_{k < \mu\beta} \mathfrak{St}(M_{\gamma,k}^\beta)$  as  $\{(p, N)_l^\gamma \mid l < \mu\}$ . Notice that for all  $\gamma < \beta$ ,

$$u_\gamma^{\beta+1} \setminus u_\gamma^\beta = \{(\gamma, i) \mid \mu\beta \leq i < \mu(\beta+1)\}.$$

By Corollary II.11.1 and Theorem II.9.6 we can find a reduced extension  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{(\beta+1)} \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{U}^{(\beta+1)}}^*$  of  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\beta$  such that for every  $l < \mu$  and  $\gamma < \beta$ ,

$$(p, N)_l^\gamma \sim (\text{ga-tp}(a_{\gamma+1, \mu\beta+l}/M_{\gamma+1, \mu\beta+l}^{\beta+1}), N_{\gamma+1, \mu\beta+l}) \upharpoonright \text{dom}(p^\gamma).$$

We now provide a diagram of the successor case. For simplicity, we describe the case  $i = 2$ .

$$\begin{array}{cccccccccccc} & & a_0^1 & & & & & & & & & & \\ & & \in & & & & & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & & & & & & & \\ M_{0,0}^1 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,1}^1 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,i}^1 & \prec_\kappa & \bigcup_{j < \mu} M_j^1 & & a_{0,\mu}^2 (\models p^0) & & a_{0,\mu+l}^2 (\models p^l) & & \\ \text{id} \Downarrow & & \text{id} \Downarrow & & \text{id} \Downarrow & & \text{id} \Downarrow & & \in & & \in & & \\ M_{0,0}^2 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,1}^2 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,i}^2 & \prec_\kappa & \bigcup_{j < \mu} M_{0,j}^2 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,\mu+1}^2 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,\mu+l}^2 & \prec_\kappa & M_{0,\mu+(l+1)}^2 \prec_\kappa \dots \end{array}$$

This completes the construction.

We now want to identify all the rows of the array which are relatively full.

**Claim II.11.3.** *For  $\delta$  a limit ordinal  $< \mu^+$ , we have that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^\delta$  is full relative to  $\langle \bar{M}^\gamma \mid \gamma < \delta \rangle$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $(p, N) \in \mathfrak{St}(M_{\beta,i}^\delta)$  be given such that  $N = M_{\beta,i}^\gamma$  for some  $\gamma < \delta$ . Since our construction is increasing and continuous, there exists  $\delta' < \delta$  such that  $(\beta, i) \in \mathfrak{U}^{\delta'}$  and  $\gamma < \delta'$ . Notice then that  $M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'}$  is universal over  $N$ . Furthermore,  $p \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'}$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$ . Thus  $(p, N) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'} \in \mathfrak{St}(M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'})$ . By condition (4) of the construction, there exists  $j < \mu(\delta' + 1)$ , such that

$$(p, N) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'} \sim (\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\beta+1}), N_{\beta+1,j}) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'}.$$



Since  $M_{\beta+1,j}^{\beta+1} \prec_{\kappa} M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta}$  and  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{\beta+1,j}$ , we can replace  $M_{\beta+1,j}^{\beta+1}$  with  $M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta}$ :

$$(p, N) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'} \sim (\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta}), N_{\beta+1,j}) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'}.$$

Let  $M'$  be a universal extension of  $M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta}$ . By definition of  $\sim$ , there exists  $q \in \text{ga-S}(M')$  such that  $q$  extends  $p \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'} = \text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta,i}^{\delta'})$  and  $q$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N$  and  $N_{\beta+1,j}$ . By the uniqueness of non-splitting extensions (Theorem II.7.11), since  $p$  does not  $\mu$  split over  $N$ , we have that  $q \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta} = p$ . Also, since  $\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $N_{\beta+1,j}$ , Theorem II.7.11 gives us  $q \upharpoonright M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta} = \text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta})$ . By definition of  $\sim$  and Lemma II.10.3,  $q$  also witnesses that  $(\text{ga-tp}(a_{\beta+1,j}/M_{\beta+1,j}^{\delta}), N_{\beta+1,j}) \upharpoonright M_{\beta,i}^{\delta} \sim (p, N)$ . Since  $(p, N)$  was chosen arbitrarily, we have verified that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\delta}$  satisfies the definition of relative fullness.

⊣

Take  $\langle \delta_{\zeta} < \mu^+ \mid \zeta \leq \theta_1 \rangle$  to be an increasing and continuous sequence of limit ordinals  $> \theta_2$ . By Proposition II.10.11, we have that

$$(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\delta_{\zeta}} \upharpoonright \{\theta_2 \times \mu\delta_{\zeta}\} \text{ is full relative to } \langle \bar{M}^{\gamma} \upharpoonright \{\theta_2 \times \mu\delta_{\zeta}\} \mid \gamma < \delta_{\zeta} \rangle.$$

Define

$$M^* := \bigcup_{\zeta < \theta_1} \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu\delta_{\zeta}} M_i^{\delta_{\zeta}} = \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu\delta_{\theta_1}} M_i^{\delta_{\theta_1}}.$$

Consider the following representation of  $M^*$ .

$$\begin{array}{c}
 \text{cofinality } \theta_2 \\
 \hline
 \begin{array}{ccccccc}
 M_{0,0}^{\delta_0} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j}^{\delta_0} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j+1}^{\delta_0} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu \delta_0} M_i^{\delta_0} \\
 \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow \\
 M_{0,0}^{\delta_\zeta} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j}^{\delta_\zeta} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j+1}^{\delta_\zeta} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu \delta_\zeta} M_i^{\delta_\zeta} \\
 \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow \\
 M_{0,0}^{\delta_{\zeta+1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j}^{\delta_{\zeta+1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j+1}^{\delta_{\zeta+1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu \delta_{\zeta+1}} M_i^{\delta_{\zeta+1}} \\
 \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow & & \text{\scriptsize $id$} \Downarrow \\
 M_{0,0}^{\delta_{\theta_1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j}^{\delta_{\theta_1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M_{\beta,j+1}^{\delta_{\theta_1}} & \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \cdots \prec_{\mathcal{K}} & M^*
 \end{array}
 \end{array}$$

cofinality  $\theta_1$

We will now verify that  $M^*$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit over  $M$  and a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit over  $M$ .

Notice that  $\langle \bigcup_{i \in \theta_2 \times \mu \delta_\zeta} M_i^{\delta_\zeta} \mid \zeta < \theta_1 \rangle$  witnesses that  $M^*$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$  limit. Since  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_{0,0}^{\delta_0}$ ,  $M^*$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_1)$ -limit over  $M$ .

Notice that by our choice of  $\delta_{\theta_1}$ ,  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\delta_{\theta_1}} \restriction \{\theta_2 \times \mu \delta_{\theta_1}\}$  is relatively full. Furthermore, we see that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\delta_{\theta_1}} \restriction \{\theta_2 \times \mu \delta_{\theta_1}\}$  is continuous since  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})^{\delta_{\theta_1}}$  is reduced. Since  $\theta_2 = \mu \cdot \theta_2$ , we can apply Theorem II.10.12 to conclude that  $M^*$  is a  $(\mu, \theta_2)$ -limit model over  $M$ .  $\dashv$

The above proof implicitly shows the existence of relatively full towers:

**Corollary II.11.4.** *For every regular limit ordinal  $\theta < \mu^+$ , there exist ordinals  $\alpha$  and  $\delta < \mu$  and a tower  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N}) \in {}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \{\alpha \times \delta\}}^\theta$  such that  $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}, \bar{N})$  is relatively full.*

## CHAPTER III

### Stable and Tame Abstract Elementary Classes

In this chapter, we explore stability results in the new context of *tame* abstract elementary classes with the amalgamation property. The main result is:

**Theorem III.0.5.** *Let  $\mathcal{K}$  be a tame abstract elementary class satisfying the amalgamation property without maximal models. There exists a cardinal  $\mu_0(\mathcal{K})$  such that for every  $\mu \geq \mu_0(\mathcal{K})$  and every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{>\mu}$ ,  $A, I \subset M$  such that  $|I| \geq \mu^+ > |A|$ , if  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois-stable in  $\mu$ , then there exists  $J \subset I$  of cardinality  $\mu^+$ , Galois-indiscernible sequence over  $A$ . Moreover  $J$  can be chosen to be a Morley sequence over  $A$ .*

This result strengthens Claim 4.16 of [Sh 394] as we do not assume categoricity. This is also an improvement of a result from [GrLe1] concerning the existence of indiscernible sequences.

A step toward this result involves proving:

**Theorem III.0.6.** *Suppose  $\mathcal{K}$  is a tame AEC. If  $\mu \geq \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$  and  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois  $\mu$ -stable then  $\kappa_\mu(\mathcal{K}) < \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$ , where  $\kappa_\mu(\mathcal{K})$  (defined below) is a distinct relative of  $\kappa(T)$ .*

This generalizes a result from [Sh3].

### III.1 Introduction

Already in the fifties model theorists studied abstract classes of structures (e.g. Jónsson [Jo1], [Jo2] and Fraïssé [Fr]). In [Sh 88], Shelah introduced the framework of abstract elementary classes and embarked on the ambitious program of developing a *classification theory for Abstract Elementary Classes*. While much is known about abstract elementary classes, especially when  $\mathcal{K}$  is an AEC under the additional assumption that there exists a cardinal  $\lambda > \text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})$  such that  $\mathcal{K}$  is categorical in  $\lambda$ , little progress has been made towards a full-fledged stability theory. One of the open problems from [Sh 394] (Remark 4.10(1)) is to identify of a good (forking-like) notion of independence for abstract elementary classes. This is open even for classes that have the amalgamation property and are categorical above the Hanf number. In [Sh 394], several weak notions of independence are introduced under the assumption that the class is categorical. Among these notions is the Galois-theoretic notion of non-splitting. This notion is further developed for categorical abstract elementary classes in Chapter II with the extension property and in [ShVi] with a powerful substitute for  $\kappa(T)$  (listed here as Theorem II.7.6). Here we study the notion of non-splitting in a more general context than categorical AEC: *Tame stable classes*. We plan to use Morley sequences for non-splitting as a bootstrap to define a dividing-like concept for these classes.

### III.2 Background

Much of the necessary background for this chapter has already been introduced in the Section II.2. We begin by reviewing the definition of Galois-type, since we will be considering variations of the underlying equivalence relation  $E$  in this chapter.

**Definition III.2.1.** Let  $\beta > 0$  be an ordinal. For triples  $(\bar{a}_l, M_l, N_l)$  where  $\bar{a}_l \in {}^\beta N_l$  and  $M_l \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_l \in \mathcal{K}$  for  $l = 0, 1$ , we define a binary relation  $E$  as follows:  $(\bar{a}_0, M_0, N_0)E(\bar{a}_1, M_1, N_1)$  iff  $M_0 = M_1$  and there exists  $N \in \mathcal{K}$  and elementary mappings  $f_0, f_1$  such that  $f_l : N_l \rightarrow N$  and  $f_l \upharpoonright M = id_M$  for  $l = 0, 1$  and  $f_0(\bar{a}_0) = f_1(\bar{a}_1)$ :

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N_1 & \xrightarrow{f_1} & N \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow f_2 \\ M & \xrightarrow{id} & N_2 \end{array}$$

**Remark III.2.2.**  $E$  is an equivalence relation on the class of triples of the form  $(\bar{a}, M, N)$  where  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$ ,  $\bar{a} \in N$  and both  $M, N \in \mathcal{K}^{am}$ . When only  $M \in \mathcal{K}^{am}$ ,  $E$  may fail to be transitive, but the transitive closure of  $E$  could be used instead.

While it is standard to use the  $E$  relation to define types in abstract elementary classes, we will discuss and make use of stronger relations between triples in section III.4 of this paper.

**Definition III.2.3.** Let  $\beta$  be a positive ordinal (can be one).

(1) For  $M, N \in \mathcal{K}^{am}$  and  $\bar{a} \in {}^\beta N$ . The *Galois type of  $\bar{a}$  in  $N$  over  $M$* , written

$\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$ , is defined to be  $(\bar{a}, M, N)/E$ .

(2) We abbreviate  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$  by  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M)$ .

(3) For  $M \in \mathcal{K}^{am}$ ,

$$\text{ga-S}^\beta(M) := \{\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N) \mid M \prec N \in \mathcal{K}_{\|M\|}^{am}, \bar{a} \in {}^\beta N\}.$$

We write  $\text{ga-S}(M)$  for  $\text{ga-S}^1(M)$ .

(4) Let  $p := \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M', N)$  for  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M'$  we denote by  $p \upharpoonright M$  the type  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$ .

The *domain of*  $p$  is denoted by  $\text{dom } p$  and it is by definition  $M'$ .

(5) Let  $p = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$ , suppose that  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N' \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  and let  $\bar{b} \in {}^{\beta}N'$  we say that  $\bar{b}$  *realizes*  $p$  iff  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}/M, N') = p \upharpoonright M$ .

(6) For types  $p$  and  $q$ , we write  $p \leq q$  if  $\text{dom}(p) \subseteq \text{dom}(q)$  and there exists  $\bar{a}$  realizing  $p$  in some  $N$  extending  $\text{dom}(p)$  such that  $(\bar{a}, \text{dom}(p), N) \in q \upharpoonright \text{dom}(p)$ .

**Definition III.2.4.** We say that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$  if for every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}^{am}$ ,  $|\text{ga-S}^{\beta}(M)| = \mu$ . The class  $\mathcal{K}$  is *Galois stable* in  $\mu$  iff  $\mathcal{K}$  is 1-stable in  $\mu$ .

**Remark III.2.5.** While an induction argument on  $n < \omega$  gives us that 1-stability implies  $n$ -stability in first order logic, the relation between  $\beta$ -stability and  $\beta'$ -stability in AECs is unknown.

In this general context it is interesting to consider:

**Example III.2.6.** Let  $T$  be a stable, countable, first order, complete theory. Set  $\mathcal{K} := \text{Mod}(T)$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$  the usual elementary submodel relation. Take  $\mu = 2^{\aleph_0}$ . While  $\mathcal{K}$  is 1-stable in  $\mu$  (in fact it is  $(n+1)$ -stable in  $\mu$  for all  $n < \omega$ ), it can be shown that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\omega$ -stable in  $\mu$  iff  $\mathcal{K}$  has the dop or otop.

**Definition III.2.7.** We say that  $M \in \mathcal{K}$  is *Galois saturated* if for every  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  of cardinality  $< \|M\|$ , and every  $p \in \text{ga-S}(N)$ , we have that  $M$  realizes  $p$ .

**Remark III.2.8.** When  $\mathcal{K} = \text{Mod}(T)$  for a first-order  $T$ , using the compactness theorem one can show (Theorem 2.2.3 of [Gr1]) that for  $M \in \mathcal{K}$ , the model  $M$  is Galois saturated iff  $M$  is saturated in the first-order sense.

It is interesting to mention

**Fact III.2.9 (Shelah [Sh 300]).** *Let  $\lambda > LS(\mathcal{K})$ . Suppose that  $\mathcal{K}$  has the amalgamation property and  $N \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$ . The following are equivalent*

- (1)  *$N$  is Galois saturated.*
- (2)  *$N$  is model-homogenous. I.e. if  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  and  $M' \succ M$  of cardinality less than  $\lambda$  then there exists a  $\mathcal{K}$ -embedding over  $M$  from  $M'$  into  $N$ .*

Unfortunately [Sh 300] has an incomplete skeleton of a proof, a complete and correct proof appeared in [Sh 576]. See also [Gr1].

In first order logic, it is natural to consider saturated models for a stable theory. In this context, saturated models are model homogeneous and hence unique. In abstract elementary classes, the existence of saturated models is often difficult to derive without the amalgamation property. To combat this, Shelah introduced a replacement for saturated models, namely, limit-models (Definition II.2.29), whose existence (Theorem II.4.10) and uniqueness (Theorem II.11.2) we have shown in Chapter II for categorical AECs under some additional assumptions.

When  $\mathcal{K} = \text{Mod}(T)$  for a first-order and stable  $T$  then automatically (by Theorem III.3.12 of [Shc]):

$$M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \text{ is saturated} \implies M \text{ is } (\mu, \sigma)\text{-limit for all } \sigma < \mu^+ \\ \text{of cofinality } \geq \kappa(T).$$

When  $T$  is countable, stable but not superstable then the saturated model of cardinality  $\mu$  is  $(\mu, \aleph_1)$ -limit but not  $(\mu, \aleph_0)$ -limit.

We have mentioned in Chapter II that the existence of universal extensions follows from categoricity and GCH (see Theorem II.2.25). However, all that is needed for the existence of universal extensions is stability:

**Claim III.2.10 (Claim 1.14.1 from [Sh 600]).** *Suppose  $\mathcal{K}$  is an abstract elementary class with the amalgamation property. If  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois stable in  $\mu$ , then for every  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$ , there exists  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  such that  $M'$  is universal over  $M$ . Moreover  $M'$  can be chosen to be a  $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit over  $M$  for any  $\sigma < \mu^+$ .*

### III.3 Existence of Indiscernibles

**Assumption III.3.1.** *For the remainder of this chapter, we will fix  $\mathcal{K}$ , an abstract elementary class with the amalgamation property.*

**Remark III.3.2.** The focus of this chapter are classes with the amalgamation property. Several of the proofs in this section can be adjusted to the context of abstract elementary classes with density of amalgamation bases as in [ShVi] and Chapter II.

The most obvious attempt to generalize Shelah's argument from Lemma I.2.5 of [Shc] for the existence of indiscernibles in first order model theory does not apply since the notion of type cannot be identified with a set of first order formulas. Moreover, there is no natural notion of a type over an arbitrary set in the context of abstract elementary classes. However we do have a notion of non-splitting at our disposal. Recall Shelah's definition of non-splitting from Chapter II:

**Definition III.3.3.** A type  $p \in S^\beta(N)$   $\mu$ -splits over  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  if and only if  $\|M\| \leq \mu$ , there exist  $N_1, N_2 \in \mathcal{K}_{\leq \mu}$  and  $h$ , a  $\mathcal{K}$ -embedding such that  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_l \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  for  $l = 1, 2$  and  $h : N_1 \rightarrow N_2$  such that  $h \upharpoonright M = id_M$  and  $p \upharpoonright N_2 \neq h(p \upharpoonright N_1)$ .

Similarly to  $\kappa(T)$  when  $T$  is first-order the following is a natural cardinal invariant of  $\mathcal{K}$ :

**Definition III.3.4.** Let  $\beta > 0$ . We define an invariant  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  to be the minimal  $\kappa$  such that for every  $\langle M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \mid i \leq \kappa \rangle$  which satisfies



(1)  $\kappa = \text{cf}(\kappa) < \mu^+$ ,

(2)  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \kappa \rangle$  is  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous and

(3) for every  $i < \kappa$ ,  $M_{i+1}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit over  $M_i$  for some  $\theta < \mu^+$ ,

and for every  $p \in \text{ga-S}^\beta(M_\kappa)$ , there exists  $i < \kappa$  such that  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_i$ .

If no such  $\kappa$  exists, we say  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K}) = \infty$ .

Another variant of  $\kappa(T)$  is the following

**Definition III.3.5.** For  $\beta > 0$ ,  $\bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  is the minimal cardinal such that for every  $N \in \mathcal{K}_\mu$  and every  $p \in \text{ga-S}^\beta(N)$  there are  $\lambda < \bar{\kappa}$  and  $M \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  such that  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M$ .

It is not difficult to verify that

**Proposition III.3.6.** For  $\mu$  with  $\text{cf}(\mu) > \bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$ , we have  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K}) \leq \bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$ .

While for stable first order theories (when  $\beta < \omega$ ) both invariants are equal, the situation for non-elementary classes is more complicated. Already in [Sh 394] it was observed that  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  is better behaved than  $\bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  when a bound for  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  was found. A corresponding bound for  $\bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  is unknown. We will defer dealing with the (perhaps) more natural invariant  $\bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  to a future paper, since we will only need the bound for  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  to prove the existence of Morley sequences.

Notice that Theorem II.7.6 states that categorical abstract elementary classes under Assumption II.1.1 satisfy  $\kappa_\mu^1(\mathcal{K}) = \omega$ , for various  $\mu$ .

A slight modification of the argument of Claim 3.3 from [Sh 394] can be used to prove a related result using the weaker assumption of Galois-stability only:

**Theorem III.3.7.** *Let  $\beta > 0$ . Suppose that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$ . For every  $p \in \text{ga-S}^\beta(N)$  there exists  $M \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N$  of cardinality  $\mu$  such that  $p$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M$ . Thus  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K}) \leq \mu$ .*

For the sake of completeness an argument for Theorem III.3.7 is included:

*Proof.* Suppose  $N \succ_{\mathcal{K}} M$ ,  $\bar{a} \in {}^\beta N$  such that  $p = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M, N)$  and  $p$  splits over  $N_0$ , for every  $N_0 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  of cardinality  $\lambda$ .

Let  $\chi := \min\{\chi \mid 2^\chi > \lambda\}$ . Notice that  $\chi \leq \lambda$  and  $2^{<\chi} \leq \lambda$ .

We'll define  $\{M_\alpha \prec M \mid \alpha < \chi\} \subseteq \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  increasing and continuous  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -chain which will be used to construct  $M_\chi^* \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  such that

$$|\text{ga-S}^\beta(M_\chi^*)| \geq 2^\chi > \lambda \text{ obtaining a contradiction to } \lambda\text{-stability.}$$

Pick  $M_0 \prec M$  any model of cardinality  $\lambda$ .

For  $\alpha = \beta + 1$ ; since  $p$  splits over  $M_\beta$  there are  $N_{\beta,\ell} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  of cardinality  $\lambda$  for  $\ell = 1, 2$  and there is  $h_\beta : N_{\beta,1} \cong_{M_\beta} N_{\beta,2}$  such that  $h_\beta(p \upharpoonright N_{\beta,1}) \neq p \upharpoonright N_{\beta,2}$ . Pick  $M_\beta \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  of cardinality  $\lambda$  containing the set  $|N_{\beta,1}| \cup |N_{\beta,2}|$ .

Now for  $\alpha < \chi$  define  $M_\alpha^* \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  and for  $\eta \in {}^\alpha 2$  define a  $\mathcal{K}$ -embedding  $h_\eta$  such that

- (1)  $\beta < \alpha \implies M_\beta^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M_\alpha^*$ ,
- (2) for  $\alpha$  limit let  $M_\alpha^* = \bigcup_{\beta < \alpha} M_\beta^*$ ,
- (3)  $\beta < \alpha \wedge \eta \in {}^\alpha 2 \implies h_{\eta \upharpoonright \beta} \subseteq h_\eta$ ,
- (4)  $\eta \in {}^\alpha 2 \implies h_\eta : M_\alpha \xrightarrow{\mathcal{K}} M_\alpha^*$  and
- (5)  $\alpha = \beta + 1 \wedge \eta \in {}^\alpha 2 \implies h_{\eta \upharpoonright 0}(N_{\beta,1}) = h_{\eta \upharpoonright 1}(N_{\beta,2})$ .

The construction is possible by using the  $\lambda$ -amalgamation property at  $\alpha = \beta + 1$  several times. Given  $\eta \in {}^\beta 2$  let  $N^*$  be of cardinality  $\lambda$  and  $f_0$  be such that the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} M_{\beta+1} & \xrightarrow{f_0} & N^* \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow id \\ M_\beta & \xrightarrow{h_\eta} & M_\beta^* \end{array}$$

commutes. Denote by  $N_2$  the model  $f_0(N_{\beta,2})$ . Since  $h_\beta : N_{\beta,1} \cong_{M_\beta} N_{\beta,2}$  there is a  $\mathcal{K}$ -mapping  $g$  fixing  $M_\beta$  such that  $g(N_{\beta,1}) = N_2$ . Using the amalgamation property now pick  $N^{**} \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  and a mapping  $f_1$  such that the diagram

$$\begin{array}{ccc} M_{\beta+1} & \xrightarrow{f_1} & N^{**} \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow id \\ N_{\beta,1} & \xrightarrow{g} & N_2 \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow id \\ M_\beta & \xrightarrow{h_\eta} & M_\beta^* \end{array}$$

Finally apply the amalgamation property to find  $M_{\beta+1}^* \in \mathcal{K}_\lambda$  and mappings  $e_0, e_1$  such that

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N^{**} & \xrightarrow{e_1} & M_{\beta+1}^* \\ id \uparrow & & \uparrow e_0 \\ M_\beta^* & \xrightarrow{id} & N^* \end{array}$$

commutes. After renaming some of the elements of  $M_{\beta+1}^*$  and changing  $e_1$  we may assume that  $e_0 = id_{N^*}$ .

Let  $h_{\eta \smallfrown 0} := f_0$  and  $h_{\eta \smallfrown 1} := e_1 \circ f_1$ .

Now for  $\eta \in {}^\chi 2$  let

$$M_\chi^* := \bigcup_{\alpha < \chi} M_\alpha^* \quad \text{and} \quad H_\eta := \bigcup_{\alpha < \chi} h_{\eta \restriction \alpha}.$$

Take  $N_\eta^* \succ_{\mathcal{K}} M_\chi^*$  from  $\mathcal{K}_\lambda$ , an amalgam of  $N$  and  $M_\chi^*$  over  $M_\chi$  such that

$$\begin{array}{ccc} N & \xrightarrow{H_\eta} & N_\eta^* \\ \uparrow id & & \uparrow id \\ M_\chi & \xrightarrow{h_\eta} & M_\chi^* \end{array}$$

commutes.

Notice that

$$\eta \neq \nu \in {}^x 2 \implies \text{ga-tp}(H_\eta(\bar{a})/M_\chi^*, N_\eta^*) \neq \text{ga-tp}(H_\nu(\bar{a})/M_\chi^*, N_\nu^*).$$

Thus  $|\text{ga-S}(M_\chi^*)| \geq 2^x > \lambda$ . ⊣

In Theorem III.5.7 below we present an improvement of Theorem III.3.7 for tame AECs: In case  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$  for some  $\mu$  above its Hanf number then  $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$  is bounded by the Hanf number. Notice that the bound does not depend on  $\mu$ .

The following is a new Galois-theoretic notion of indiscernible sequence.

**Definition III.3.8.** (1)  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i < i^* \rangle$  is a *Galois indiscernible sequence over  $M$*  iff

for every  $i_1 < \dots < i_n < i^*$  and every  $j_1 < \dots < j_n < i^*$ ,  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_1} \dots \bar{a}_{i_n}/M) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{j_1} \dots \bar{a}_{j_n}/M)$ .

(2)  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i < i^* \rangle$  is a *Galois-indiscernible sequence over  $A$*  iff for every  $i_1 < \dots < i_n <$

$i^*$  and every  $j_1 < \dots < j_n < i^*$ , there exists  $M_i, M_j, M^* \in \mathcal{K}$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -mappings  $f_i, f_j$  such that

(a)  $A \subseteq M_i, M_j$ ;

(b)  $f_l : M_l \rightarrow M^*$ , for  $l = i, j$ ;

(c)  $f_i(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_n}) = f_j(\bar{a}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{j_n})$  and

(d) and  $f_i \upharpoonright A = f_j \upharpoonright A = id_A$ .

**Remark III.3.9.** This is on the surface a weaker notion of indiscernible sequence than is presented in [Sh 394]. However, under the amalgamation property, this definition and the definition in [Sh 394] are equivalent.

The following lemma provides us with sufficient conditions to find an indiscernible sequence.

**Lemma III.3.10.** *Let  $\mu \geq LS(\mathcal{K})$ ,  $\kappa, \lambda$  be ordinals and  $\beta$  a positive ordinal. Suppose that  $\langle M_i \mid i < \lambda \rangle$  and  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i < \lambda \rangle$  satisfy*

- (1)  $\langle M_i \in \mathcal{K}_\mu \mid i < \lambda \rangle$  are  $\preceq_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing;
- (2)  $M_{i+1}$  is a  $(\mu, \kappa)$ -limit over  $M_i$ ;
- (3)  $\bar{a}_i \in {}^\beta M_{i+1}$ ;
- (4)  $p_i := \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/M_i, M_{i+1})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$  and
- (5) for  $i < j < \lambda$ ,  $p_i \leq p_j$ .

*Then,  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i < \lambda \rangle$  is a Galois-indiscernible sequence over  $M_0$ .*

**Definition III.3.11.** A sequence  $\langle \bar{a}_i, M_i \mid i < \lambda \rangle$  satisfying conditions (1) – (6) of Lemma III.3.10 is called a *Morley sequence*.

**Remark III.3.12.** Notice that our definition of Morley sequence varies from some literature. An alternative name for our sequences (suggested by John Baldwin) is a *coherent non-splitting sequence*.

**Remark III.3.13.** While the statement of the lemma is similar to Shelah's Lemma I.2.5 in [Shc], the proof differs, since types are not sets of formulas.

*Proof.* We prove that for  $i_0 < \dots < i_n < \lambda$  and  $j_0 < \dots < j_n < \lambda$ ,  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{j_n}/M_0, M_{j_{n+1}})$  by induction on  $n < \omega$ .

$n = 0$ : Let  $i_0, j_0 < \lambda$  be given. Condition 5, gives us

$$\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_0}/M_0, M_{i_0+1}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{j_0}/M_0, M_{j_0+1}).$$

$n > 0$ : Suppose that the claim holds for all increasing sequences  $\bar{i}$  and  $\bar{j} \in \lambda$  of length  $n$ . Let  $i_0 < \dots < i_n < \lambda$  and  $j_0 < \dots < j_n < \lambda$  be given. Without loss of generality,  $i_n \leq j_n$ . Define  $M^* := M_1$ . From condition 2 and uniqueness of  $(\mu, \omega)$ -limits, we can find a  $\prec_K$ -isomorphism,  $g : M_{j_n} \rightarrow M_{i_n}$  such that  $g \upharpoonright M_0 = \text{id}_{M_0}$ . Moreover we can extend  $g$  to  $g : M_{j_{n+1}} \rightarrow M_{i_{n+1}}$ . Denote by  $\bar{b}_{j_l} := g(\bar{a}_{j_l})$  for  $l = 0, \dots, n$ . Notice that  $b_{j_l} \in M_{i_n}$  for  $l < n$ . Since  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{j_n}/M_0, M_{j_{n+1}})$  it suffices to prove that  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}})$ .

Also notice that the  $\prec_K$ -mapping preserves some properties of  $p_j$ . Namely, since  $p_j$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ ,  $g(p_j \upharpoonright M_{j_n}) = p_j \upharpoonright M_{i_n}$ .

Thus,  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_n}/M_{i_n}, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{j_n}/M_{i_n}, M_{i_{n+1}})$ . In particular we have that  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_n}/M_{i_n}, M_{i_{n+1}})$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ .

By the induction hypothesis

$$\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_{n-1}}/M_0, M_{i_n}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_{n-1}}/M_0, M_{i_n}).$$

Thus we can find  $h_i : M_{i_{n+1}} \rightarrow M^*$  and  $h_j : M_{i_{n+1}} \rightarrow M^*$  such that  $h_i(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_{n-1}}) = h_j(\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_{n-1}})$ . Let us abbreviate  $\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_{n-1}}$  by  $\bar{b}_{\bar{j}}$ . Similarly we will write  $\bar{a}_{\bar{i}}$  for  $\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_{n-1}}$ .

By appealing to condition 4, we derive several equalities that will be useful in the latter portion of the proof. Since  $p_j$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ , we have that  $p_j \upharpoonright h_j(M_{i_n}) = h_j(p_j \upharpoonright M_{i_n})$ , rewritten as

$$(*) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_n}/h_j(M_{i_n}), M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n})/h_j(M_{i_n}), M^*).$$

Similarly as  $p_i$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ , we get

$p_i \restriction h_j(M_{i_n}) = h_j(p_i \restriction M_{i_n})$  and  $p_i \restriction h_i(M_{i_n}) = h_i(p_i \restriction M_{i_n})$ . These equalities translate to

$$(**)_j \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n}/h_j(M_{i_n}), M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_{i_n})/h_j(M_{i_n}), M^*) \text{ and}$$

$$(**)_i \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n}/h_i(M_{i_n}), M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/h_i(M_{i_n}), M^*), \text{ respectively.}$$

Finally, from condition 5., notice that

$$(* *) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n}/M_{i_n}, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_n}/M_{i_n}, M_{i_{n+1}}).$$

Applying  $h_j$  to  $(*)$  yields

$$(\dagger) \quad \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n})/h_j(M_{i_n}), M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_{i_n})/h_j(M_{i_n}), M^*).$$

Since  $h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n}) = h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n}) \in h_j(M_{i_n})$ , we can draw from  $(\dagger)$  the following:

$$(1) \quad \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n}) \wedge h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n})/M_0, M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_{i_n}) \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*).$$

Equality  $(**)_i$  allows us to see

$$(2) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n} \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n}) \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*).$$

Since  $\text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_{i_n})/h_j(M_{i_n}), M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n}/h_j(M_{i_n}), M_{i_{n+1}})$  (equality  $(**)_j$ )

and  $h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n}) = h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n}) \in h_j(M_{i_n})$ , we get that

$$(3) \quad \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_{i_n}) \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_n} \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*).$$

Combining equalities (1), (2) and (3), we get

$$(\dagger\dagger) \quad \text{ga-tp}(h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n}) \wedge h_i(\bar{a}_{i_n})/M_0, M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n}) \wedge h_j(\bar{b}_{j_n})/M_0, M^*).$$

Recall that  $h_i \restriction M_0 = h_j \restriction M_0 = \text{id}_{M_0}$ . Thus  $(\dagger\dagger)$ , witnesses that

$$\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_{i_0}, \dots, \bar{a}_{i_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_{j_0}, \dots, \bar{b}_{j_n}/M_0, M_{i_{n+1}}).$$

□

### III.4 Tame Abstract Elementary Classes

While the notion of type defined as equivalence classes of  $E$  has led to several profound results in the study of abstract elementary classes, a stronger equivalence relation (denoted  $E_\mu$ ) is eventually utilized in various partial solutions to Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture (see [Sh 394] and [Sh 576]).

Shelah identified  $E_\mu$  as an interesting relation in [Sh 394]. Here we recall the definition.

**Definition III.4.1.** Triples  $(\bar{a}_1, M, N_1)$  and  $(\bar{a}_2, M, N_2)$  are said to be  $E_\mu$ -related provided that for every  $M' \prec_\mathcal{K} M$  with  $M' \in \mathcal{K}_{<\mu}$ ,

$$(\bar{a}_1, M', N_1)E(\bar{a}_2, M', N_2).$$

Notice that in first order logic, the finite character of consistency implies that two types are equal if and only if they are  $E_\omega$ -related.

In Main Claim 9.3 of [Sh 394], Shelah ultimately proves that, under categoricity in some  $\lambda > Hanf(\mathcal{K})$  and under the assumption that  $\mathcal{K}$  has the amalgamation property, for types over saturated models,  $E$ -equivalence is the same as  $E_\mu$  equivalence for some  $\mu < Hanf(\mathcal{K})$ .

We now define a context for abstract elementary classes where consistency has small character.

**Definition III.4.2.** Let  $\chi$  be a cardinal number. We say the abstract elementary class  $\mathcal{K}$  with the amalgamation property is  $\chi$ -tame provided that for types,  $E$ -equivalence is the same as the  $E_\chi$  relation. In other words, for  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{>Hanf(\mathcal{K})}$ ,  $p \neq q \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  implies existence of  $N \prec_\mathcal{K} M$  of cardinality  $\chi$  such that  $p \upharpoonright N \neq q \upharpoonright N$ .

$\mathcal{K}$  is tame iff there exists such that  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\chi$ -tame for some  $\chi < Hanf(\mathcal{K})$



**Remark III.4.3.** We actually only use that  $E$ -equivalence is the same as  $E_\chi$ -equivalence for types over limit models.

Notice that if  $\mathcal{K}$  is a finite diagram (i.e. we have amalgamation not only all models but also over subsets of models) then it is a tame AEC.

There are tame AECs with amalgamation which are not finite diagrams. In fact Leo Marcus in [Ma] constructed an  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$  sentence which is categorical in every cardinal but does not have an uncountable sequentially homogeneous model. Lately Boris Zilber found a mathematically more natural example [Zi] motivated by the Schanuel Conjecture. His example is not homogeneous nor  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$ -axiomatizable. Shelah proves tameness for countable  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$ -theories which are categorical in some uncountable cardinal and for all  $n < \omega$   $I(\aleph_{n+1}, \mathcal{K}) < 2^{\aleph_{n+1}}$  ([Sh 87a] and [Sh 87b].)

While we are convinced that there are examples of arbitrary level of tameness at the moment we don't have any.

**Question III.4.4.** For  $\mu_1 < \mu_2 < \beth_{\omega_1}$ , find an AEC which is  $\mu_2$ -tame but not  $\mu_1$ -tame.

In fact we suspect that the question is easy to answer.

### III.5 The Order Property

The order property, defined next, is an analog of the first order definition of order property using formulas. The order property for non-elementary classes was introduced by Shelah in [Sh 394].

**Definition III.5.1.**  $\mathcal{K}$  is said to have the  $\kappa$ -order property provided that for every  $\alpha$ , there exists  $\langle \bar{d}_i \mid i < \alpha \rangle$  and where  $\bar{d}_i \in {}^\kappa \mathfrak{C}$  such that if  $i_0 < j_0 < \alpha$  and  $i_1 < j_1 < \alpha$ ,

$$(*) \text{ then for no } f \in \text{Aut}(\mathfrak{C}) \text{ do we have } f(\bar{d}_{i_0} \hat{\ } \bar{d}_{j_0}) = \bar{d}_{j_1} \hat{\ } \bar{d}_{i_1}.$$

**Example III.5.2.** Let  $T$  be a superstable, first order theory in a countable language. Set  $\mathcal{K} := \text{Mod}(T)$  and  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$  the usual elementary submodel relation.  $\mathcal{K}$  has the  $\aleph_0$ -order property iff  $\mathcal{K}$  has dop or otop.

**Remark III.5.3 (Trivial monotonicity).** Notice that for  $\kappa_1 < \kappa_2$  if a class has the  $\kappa_1$ -order property then it has the  $\kappa_2$ -order property.

**Claim III.5.4 (Claim 4.6.3 of [Sh 394]).** *We may replace the phrase every  $\alpha$  in Definition III.5.1 with every  $\alpha < \beth_{(2^{\kappa+LS(\mathcal{K})})^+}$  and get an equivalent definition.*

**Fact III.5.5 (Claim 4.8.2 of [Sh 394]).** *If  $\mathcal{K}$  has the  $\kappa$ -order property and  $\mu \geq \kappa$ , then for some  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu}$  we have that  $|\text{ga-S}^{\kappa}(M)/E_{\kappa}| \geq \mu^+$ . Moreover, we can conclude that  $\mathcal{K}$  is not Galois stable in  $\mu$ .*

**Question III.5.6.** *Can we get a version of the stability spectrum theorem for tame stable classes?*

The following is a generalization of a old theorem of Shelah from [Sh3] (it is Theorem 4.17 in [GrLe2])

**Theorem III.5.7.** *Let  $\beta > 0$ . Suppose that  $\mathcal{K}$  is a  $\kappa$ -tame abstract elementary class. If  $\mathcal{K}$  is  $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$  with  $\beth_{(2^{\kappa+LS(\mathcal{K})})^+} \leq \mu$ , then  $\kappa_{\chi}^{\beta}(\mathcal{K}) < \beth_{(2^{\kappa+LS(\mathcal{K})})^+}$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $\chi := \beth_{(2^{\kappa+LS(\mathcal{K})})^+}$ . Suppose that the conclusion of the theorem does not hold. Let  $\langle M_i \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu} \mid i \leq \chi \rangle$  and  $p \in \text{ga-S}^{\beta}(M_{\chi})$  witness the failure. Namely, the following hold:

- (1)  $\langle M_i \mid i \leq \chi \rangle$  is  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous,
- (2) for every  $i < \chi$ ,  $M_{i+1}$  is a  $(\mu, \theta)$ -limit over  $M_i$  for some  $\theta < \mu^+$  and
- (3) for every  $i < \mu^+$ ,  $p$   $\mu$ -splits over  $M_i$ .

For every  $i < \chi$  let  $f_i, N_i^1$  and  $N_i^2$  witness that  $p$   $\mu$ -splits over  $M_i$ . Namely,

$$M_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_i^1, N_i^2 \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M,$$

$$f_i : N_i^1 \cong N_i^2 \text{ with } f_i \upharpoonright M_i = id_{M_i}$$

$$\text{and } f_i(p \upharpoonright N_i^1) \neq p \upharpoonright N_i^2.$$

By  $\kappa$ -tameness, there exist  $B_i$  and  $A_i := f_i^{-1}(B_i)$  of size  $< \kappa$  such that

$$f_i(p \upharpoonright A_i) \neq p \upharpoonright B_i.$$

By renumbering our chain of models, we may assume that

$$(4) \ A_i, B_i \subset M_{i+1}.$$

Since  $M_{i+1}$  is a limit model over  $M_i$ , we can additionally conclude that

$$(5) \ \bar{c}_i \in M_{i+1} \text{ realizes } p \upharpoonright M_i.$$

For each  $i < \mu$ , let  $\bar{d}_i := A_i \hat{\ } B_i \hat{\ } \bar{c}_i$ .

**Claim III.5.8.**  $\langle \bar{d}_i \mid i < \chi \rangle$  witnesses the  $\kappa$ -order property.

*Proof.* Suppose for the sake of contradiction that there exist  $g \in \text{Aut}(\mathfrak{C})$ ,  $i_0 < j_0 < \chi$  and  $i_1 < j_1 < \chi$  such that

$$g(\bar{d}_{i_0} \hat{\ } \bar{d}_{j_0}) = \bar{d}_{j_1} \hat{\ } \bar{d}_{i_1}.$$

Notice that since  $i_0 < j_0 < \alpha$  we have that  $\bar{c}_{i_0} \in M_{j_0}$ . So  $f_{j_0}(\bar{c}_{i_0}) = \bar{c}_{i_0}$ . Recall that  $f_{j_0}(A_{j_0}) = B_{j_0}$ . Thus,  $f_{j_0}$  witnesses that

$$(*) \text{ ga-tp}(\bar{c}_{i_0} \hat{\ } A_{j_0} / \emptyset) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{c}_{i_0} \hat{\ } B_{j_0} / \emptyset).$$

Applying  $g$  to  $(*)$  we get

$$(**) \text{ ga-tp}(\bar{c}_{j_1} \hat{\ } A_{i_1} / \emptyset) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{c}_{j_1} \hat{\ } B_{i_1} / \emptyset).$$

Applying  $f_{i_1}$  to the RHS of (\*\*), we notice that

$$(\sharp) \text{ga-tp}(f_{i_1}(\bar{c}_{j_1})^\wedge B_{i_1}/\emptyset) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{c}_{j_1}^\wedge B_{i_1}/\emptyset).$$

Because  $i_1 < j_1$ , we have that  $\bar{c}_{j_1}$  realizes  $p \upharpoonright M_{i_1}$ . Thus,  $(\sharp)$  implies

$$(\sharp\sharp) f_{i_1}(p \upharpoonright A_{i_1}) = p \upharpoonright B_{i_1},$$

which contradicts our choice of  $f_{i_1}$ ,  $A_{i_1}$  and  $B_{i_1}$ .

⊥

By Claim III.5.4 and Fact III.5.5, we have that  $\mathcal{K}$  is unstable in  $\mu$ , contradicting our hypothesis.

⊥

### III.6 Morley sequences

**Hypothesis III.6.1.** For the rest of the chapter we make the following assumption:  $\mathcal{K}$  is a tame abstract elementary class, has no maximal models and satisfies the amalgamation property.

**Theorem III.6.2.** *Fix  $\beta > 0$ . Suppose  $\mu \geq \beth_{(2^{\text{Hanf}(\mathcal{K})})^+}$ . Let  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{>\mu}$ ,  $A, I \subset M$  be given such that  $|I| \geq \mu^+ > |A|$ . If  $\mathcal{K}$  is Galois  $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$ , then there exists  $J \subset I$  of cardinality  $\mu^+$ , Galois indiscernible over  $A$ . Moreover  $J$  can be chosen to be a Morley sequence over  $A$ .*

*Proof.* Fix  $\kappa := \text{cf}(\mu)$ . Let  $\{\bar{a}_i \in {}^\beta I \mid i < \mu^+\}$  be given. Define  $\langle M_i \in K_\mu \mid i < \mu^+ \rangle$   $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous satisfying

$$(1) \ A \subseteq |M_0|$$

$$(2) \ M_{i+1} \text{ is a } (\mu, \kappa)\text{-limit over } M_i$$

(3)  $\bar{a}_i \in M_{i+1}$

Let  $p_i := \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/M_i, M_{i+1})$  for every  $i < \mu^+$ . Define  $f : S_\kappa^{\mu^+} \rightarrow \mu^+$  by

$$f(i) := \min\{j < \mu^+ \mid p_i \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_j\}.$$

By Theorem III.5.7,  $f$  is regressive. Thus by Fodor's Lemma, there are a stationary set  $S \subseteq S_\kappa^{\mu^+}$  and  $j_0 \in I$  such that for every  $i \in S$ ,

$$(\dagger) \quad p_i \text{ does not } \mu\text{-split over } M_{j_0}.$$

By stability and the pigeon-hole principle there exists  $p^* \in \text{ga-S}(M_{j_0})$  and  $S^* \subseteq S$  of cardinality  $\mu^+$  such that for every  $i \in S^*$ ,  $p^* = p_i \upharpoonright M_{j_0}$ . Enumerate and rename  $S^*$ . Let  $M^* := M_1$ . Again, by stability we can find  $S^{**} \subset S^*$  of cardinality  $\mu^+$  such that for every  $i \in S^{**}$ ,  $p^{**} = p_i \upharpoonright M^*$ . Enumerate and rename  $S^{**}$ .

**Subclaim III.6.3.** *For  $i < j \in S^{**}$ ,  $p_i = p_j \upharpoonright M_i$ .*

*Proof.* Let  $0 < i < j \in S^{**}$  be given. Since  $M_{i+1}$  and  $M_{j+1}$  are  $(\mu, \kappa)$ -limits over  $M_i$ , there exists an isomorphism  $g : M_{j+1} \rightarrow M_{i+1}$  such that  $g \upharpoonright M_i = \text{id}_{M_i}$ . Let  $\bar{b}_j := g(\bar{a}_j)$ . Since the type  $p_j$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_{j_0}$ ,  $g$  cannot witness the splitting. Therefore, it must be the case that  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/M_i, M_{i+1}) = p_i \upharpoonright M_i$ . Then, it suffices to show that  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/M_i, M_{i+1}) = p_i$ .

Since  $p_i \upharpoonright M_0 = p_j \upharpoonright M_0$ , we can find  $\prec_\kappa$ -mappings witnessing the equality. Furthermore since  $M^*$  is universal over  $M_0$ , we can find  $h_l : M_{l+1} \rightarrow M^*$  such that  $h_l \upharpoonright M_0 = \text{id}_{M_0}$  for  $l = i, j$  and  $h_i(\bar{a}_i) = h_j(\bar{b}_j)$ .

We will use  $(\dagger)$  to derive several inequalities. Consider the following possible witness to splitting. Let  $N_1 := M_i$  and  $N_2 := h_i(M_i)$ . Since  $p_i$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ , we have that  $p_i \upharpoonright N_2 = h_i(p_i \upharpoonright N_1)$ , rewritten as

$$(*) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/h_i(M_i), M_{i+1}) = \text{ga-tp}(h_i(\bar{a}_i)/h_i(M_i), M^*).$$

Similarly we can conclude that

$$(**) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/h_j(M_i), M_{i+1}) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_j)/h_j(M_i), M^*).$$

By choice of  $S^{**}$ , we know that

$$(* * *) \quad \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/M^*) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/M^*).$$

Now let us consider another potential witness of splitting.  $N_1^* := h_i(M_i)$  and  $N_2^* := h_j(M_i)$  with  $H^* := h_j \circ h_i^{-1} : N_1^* \rightarrow N_2^*$ . Since  $p_j \upharpoonright M_i$  does not  $\mu$ -split over  $M_0$ ,  $p_j \upharpoonright N_2^* = H^*(p_j \upharpoonright N_1^*)$ . Thus by  $(**)$  we have

$$(\sharp) \quad H^*(p_j \upharpoonright N_1^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{b}_j)/h_j(M_i), M^*).$$

Now let us translate  $H^*(p_j \upharpoonright N_1^*)$ . By monotonicity and  $(* * *)$ , we have that  $p_j \upharpoonright N_1^* = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/h_i(M_i), M_{i+1}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/h_i(M_i), M_{i+1})$ . We can then conclude by  $(*)$  that  $p_j \upharpoonright N_1^* = \text{ga-tp}(h_i(\bar{a}_i)/h_i(M_i), M_{i+1})$ . Applying  $H^*$  to this equality yields

$$(\sharp\sharp) \quad H^*(p_j \upharpoonright N_1^*) = \text{ga-tp}(h_j(\bar{a}_i)/h_j(M_i), M^*).$$

By combining the equalities from  $(\sharp)$  and  $(\sharp\sharp)$  and applying  $h_j^{-1}$  we get that

$$\text{ga-tp}(\bar{b}_j/M_i, M_{i+1}) = \text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}_i/M_i, M_{i+1}).$$

⊢

Notice that by Subclaim III.6.3 and our choice of  $S^{**}$ ,  $\langle M_i \mid i \in S^{**} \rangle$  and  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i \in J \rangle$  satisfy the conditions of Lemma III.3.10. Applying Lemma III.3.10, we get that  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i \in S^{**} \rangle$  is a Morley sequence over  $M_0$ . In particular, since  $A \subset M_0$ , we have that  $\langle \bar{a}_i \mid i \in S^{**} \rangle$  is a Morley sequence over  $A$ .

⊢

### III.7 Exercise on Dividing

With the existence of Morley sequences a natural extension is to study the following dependence relation to determine whether or not it satisfies properties such as transitivity, symmetry or extension. Here we derive the existence property.

**Definition III.7.1.** Let  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  and  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$ . We say that  $p$  *divides over*  $N$  iff there are  $\bar{a} \in M$  non-algebraic over  $N$  and a Morley sequence,  $\{\bar{a}_n \mid n < \omega\}$  for the  $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/N, M)$  such that for every collection  $\{f_n \in \text{Aut}_M \mathfrak{C} \mid n < \omega\}$  with  $f_n(\bar{a}) = \bar{a}_n$  we have

$$\{f_n(p) \mid n < \omega\} \text{ is inconsistent.}$$

**Theorem III.7.2 (Existence).** *Suppose that  $\mathcal{K}$  is stable in  $\mu$  and  $\kappa$ -tame for some  $\kappa < \mu$ . For every  $p \in \text{ga-S}(M)$  with  $M \in \mathcal{K}_{\geq \mu}$  there exists  $N \prec_{\mathcal{K}} M$  of cardinality  $\mu$  such that  $p$  does not divide over  $N$ .*

*Proof.* Suppose that  $p$  and  $M$  form a counter-example. WLOG we may assume that  $M = \mathfrak{C}$ . Through the proof of Claim 3.3.1 of [Sh 394], in order to contradict stability in  $\mu$ , it suffices to find  $N_i, N_i^1, N_i^2, h_i$  for  $i < \mu$  satisfying

- (1)  $\langle N_i \in \mathcal{K}_{\mu} \mid i \leq \mu \rangle$  is a  $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -increasing and continuous sequence of models;
- (2)  $N_i \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_i^l \prec_{\mathcal{K}} N_{i+1}$  for  $i < \mu$  and  $l = 1, 2$ ;
- (3) for  $i < \mu$ ,  $h_i : N_i^1 \cong N_i^2$  and  $h_i \upharpoonright N_i = \text{id}_{N_i}$  and
- (4)  $p \upharpoonright N_i^2 \neq h_i(p \upharpoonright N_i^1)$ .

Suppose that  $N_i$  has been defined. Since  $p$  divides over every substructure of cardinality  $\mu$ , we may find  $\bar{a}$ ,  $\{\bar{a}_n \mid n < \omega\}$  and  $\{f_n \mid n < \omega\}$  witnessing that  $p$  divides over  $N_i$ . Namely, we have that  $\{f_n(p) \mid n < \omega\}$  is inconsistent. Let  $n < \omega$

be such that  $f_0(p) \neq f_n(p)$ . Then  $p \neq f_0^{-1} \circ f_n(p)$ . By  $\kappa$ -tameness, we can find  $N^* \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \mathfrak{C}$  of cardinality  $\mu$  containing  $N$  such that  $p \restriction N^* \neq (f_0^{-1} \circ f_n(p)) \restriction N^*$ . WLOG  $f_0^{-1} \circ f_n \in \text{Aut}_N N^*$ .

Let  $h_i := f_0^{-1} \circ f_n$ ,  $N_i^1 := N^*$  and  $N_i^2 := N^*$ . Choose  $N_{i+1} \prec_{\mathcal{K}} \mathfrak{C}$  to be an extension of  $N^*$  of cardinality  $\mu$ . ⊥



## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- [BaSh] John Baldwin and Saharon Shelah. Abstract Classes with Few Models have 'Homogeneous-Universal' Models. *JSL*, **60**, 1995.
- [CK] C. C. Chang and H. Jerome Keisler. **Model Theory**. North-Holland Publishing .Co., Amsterdam, 1990.
- [DS] Keith J. Devlin and Saharon Shelah. A weak version of  $\diamond$  which follows from  $2^{\aleph_0} < 2^{\aleph_1}$ . *Israel Journal of Mathematics*, **29**, 239–247, 1978.
- [EFT] Ebbinghaus, Flum and Thomas. **Mathematical Logic** Springer-Verlag, New York, 1978.
- [Fr] R. Fraïssé. Sur quelques classifications des systèmes de relations, *Publ. Sci. Univ. Alger. Sér. A* **1** (1954), 35–182.
- [Gy] Gregory, J. Higher Sosulin trees and the Generalized Continuum Hypothesis, *JSL* **41**, (1976), 663–671.
- [Gr1] Rami Grossberg. Classification Theory for Nonelementary Classes. (39 pages), to appear in **Logic and Algebra**, Contemporary Mathematics, AMS.  
[www.math.cmu.edu/~rami/Bilgi.pdf](http://www.math.cmu.edu/~rami/Bilgi.pdf)
- [Gr2] Rami Grossberg. **A Course in Model Theory**. Book in Preparation.
- [GrLe1] Rami Grossberg and Olivier Lessmann. The local order property in non elementary classes, *Arch Math Logic* **39** (2000) 6, 439–457.
- [GrLe2] Rami Grossberg and Olivier Lessmann. Shelah's stability spectrum and homogeneity spectrum in finite diagrams, *Archive for Mathematical Logic*, **41**, (2002) 1, 1–31.
- [GrVa] Rami Grossberg and Monica VanDieren. Morley Sequences in Abstract Elementary Classes. Preprint. URL:[www.math.cmu.edu/~rami/Mseq.pdf](http://www.math.cmu.edu/~rami/Mseq.pdf).
- [Jo1] Bjarni Jónsson. Universal relational systems, *Math. Scand.* **4** (1956) 193–208.
- [Jo2] Bjarni Jónsson. Homogeneous universal systems. *Math. Scand.*, **8**, 1960, 137–142.
- [Ke1] H. Jerome Keisler.  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}(\mathbf{Q})$  *Ann of Math Logic*, **1** , 1969.
- [Ke2] H. Jerome Keisler. **Infinitary Logic**. North-Holland 1971
- [KoSh] Oren Kolman and Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of Theories in  $L_{\kappa, \omega}$  when  $\kappa$  is a measurable cardinal. Part I. *Fundamentae Mathematicae*, **151**, 209–240, 1996.
- [Lo] J. Löf. On the categoricity in power of elementary deductive systems and related problems. *Colloq. Math.*, **3**, 58-62, 1954.
- [MaSh] Michael Makkai and Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of theories  $L_{\kappa \omega}$  with  $\kappa$  a compact cardinal. *Annals of Pure and Applied Logic*, **47**, 41-97, 1990.

- [Ma] Leo Marcus. A prime minimal model with an infinite set of indiscernibles, *Israel Journal of Mathematics*, **11**, (1972), 180-183.
- [Mo] Michael Morley. Categoricity in power. *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, **114**, 514-538, 1965.
- [Sha] Saharon Shelah. **Classification Theory and the Number of Nonisomorphic Models**. North-Holland Publishing Co., Amsterdam, 1978.
- [Shc] Saharon Shelah. **Classification Theory and the Number of Non-isomorphic Models** 2<sup>nd</sup> edition. North Holland Amsterdam, 1990.
- [Shg] Saharon Shelah. **Cardinal Arithmetic**, volume 29 of *Oxford Logic Guides*. Oxford University Press, 1994.
- [Sh3] Saharon Shelah. Finite diagrams stable in power. *Ann. Math. Logic*, **2**, 69-118, 1970/1971.
- [Sh31] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of uncountable theories. In L.A. Henkin et al., editors, **Proceedings of the Tarski Symposium**, pages 187-203, Providence, R.I, 1974.
- [Sh 48] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity in  $\aleph_1$  of sentences in  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}(\mathbf{Q})$ . *Israel J. Math.*, 1975.
- [Sh 87a] Saharon Shelah. Classification theory for nonelementary classes, I. The number of uncountable models of  $\psi \in L_{\omega_1, \omega}$ . Part A. *Israel J. Math.*, 1983.
- [Sh 87b] Saharon Shelah. Classification theory for nonelementary classes, I. The number of uncountable models of  $\psi \in L_{\omega_1, \omega}$ . Part B. *Israel J. Math.*, 1983.
- [Sh 88] Saharon Shelah. Classification of nonelementary classes, II. Abstract Elementary Classes. In **Classification Theory (Chicago IL 1985)**, volume 1292 of *Lecture Notes in Mathematics*, pages 419-497. Springer, Berlin, 1987. Proceedings of the USA-Israel Conference on Classification Theory, Chicago, December 1985; ed. Baldwin, J.T.
- [Sh 108] Saharon Shelah. On successors of singular cardinals, in Logic Colloquium 78 (edited by Boffa, van Dalen and McAloon), 357-380, Studies in Logic and the Foundation of Mathematics col 97, North-Holland, New York, 1979.
- [Sh 300] Saharon Shelah. Universal Classes. In *Classification Theory of Lecture Notes in Mathematics*, **1292**, 264-418. Springer-Berlin, 1987.
- [Sh 394] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of abstract classes with amalgamation. *Annals of Pure and Applied Logic*, 1999.
- [Sh 472] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of Theories in  $L_{\kappa^*, \omega}$  when  $\kappa^*$  is a measurable cardinal. Part II. *Fundamenta Mathematica*.
- [Sh 576] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity of an abstract elementary class in two successive cardinals. *Israel J. of Math.*, 102 pages, 2001.
- [Sh 600] Saharon Shelah. Categoricity in abstract elementary classes: going up inductive step. Preprint. 92 pages.
- [Sh 702] Saharon Shelah. On what I do not understand (and have something to say), model theory. *Math Japonica*, **51**, pages 329-377, 2000.
- [ShVi] Saharon Shelah and Andrés Villaveces. Categoricity in abstract elementary classes with no maximal models. *Annals of Pure and Applied Logic*, 1999.
- [Zi] Boris Zilber. Analytic and pseudo-analytic structures. Preprint.  
[www.maths.ox.ac.uk/~zilber](http://www.maths.ox.ac.uk/~zilber)

## Index

- $M \xRightarrow{id} N$ , 25
- $(p, N)$ , 82
- $(p, N) \restriction M$ , 83
- $(\bar{M}, \bar{a}) \restriction \beta$ , 41
- $(\mu, \mu^+)$ -limit model, 28
  - homogeneity, 28
- $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ , 40
- $<_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ -extension property, 41
  - for nice towers, 42–49
- $<^c$ , 64
- $<^c$ -extension property, 64–70
- $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ , 55
- $<_{\mu, \alpha}^c$ -extension property, 56–60
- $E$ , binary relation, 6, 23, 96
- $E_\mu$ -related, 108
- $h(p)$ , 50
- $I_X$ , 29
- $I_\alpha$ , 29
- $L(\mathbf{Q})$ , 3
- $S_\theta^{\mu^+}$ , 31
- $\bar{a} \restriction \beta$ , 41
- $\bar{M} \restriction \beta$ , 41
- $\bar{\kappa}_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$ , 101
- $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$ , 98
- $\chi$ -tame, 108
- $\diamond_{\mu^+}(S)$ , 32
- $\text{ga-S}(M)$ , 24
- $\text{ga-S}^1(M)$ , 97
- $\text{ga-S}^\beta(M)$ , 97
- $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ , 40
- $\mathcal{K}_\mu^\sigma$ , 26
- $\mathcal{K}^{am}$ , 22
- $\mathcal{K}^{\prec \kappa}$ , 19
- $\mathcal{K}_\lambda$ , 19
- $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}$ , 39
- $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^\theta$ , 39
- $\kappa$ -order property, 109
- $\kappa_\mu^\beta(\mathcal{K})$ , 95, 100
- $\leq_{\mu, \alpha}^b$ , 40
- $\leq^c$ , 64
- $\mu$ -splits, 50, 100
  - invariance, 51

- monotonicity, 51
- $\Phi_{\mu^+}(S)$ , 32
- $\prec_{\mathcal{K}}$ -embedding, 20
- $\mathfrak{St}(M)$ , 82
- $\sim$ , 83
- ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\alpha}^*$ , 55
- $\Theta_{\mu^+}(S)$ , 32
- $\text{ga-tp}(a/M)$ , 24
- $\text{ga-tp}(a/M, N)$ , 23
- $\text{ga-tp}(\bar{a}/M)$ , 97
- $\mathfrak{U}$ , 62
- ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu,\mathfrak{U}}^*$ , 62
- $\mathfrak{s}'$  Conjecture, 2
- abstract elementary class, 4
- abstract elementary classes
  - are *PC*-classes, 22
- AEC, 4
- amalgamation base, 6, 22
  - $(\mu_0, \mu_1)$ , 6, 22
  - $\mathcal{K}^{am}$ , 22
  - density of, 30
- amalgamation bases
  - limit models, 31
- amalgamation property, 7, 23, 100
- categorical, 2, 5
- coherent non-splitting sequence, 105
- completely reduced, 71
- context of Shelah and Villaveces, 5, 15
- direct limit
  - definition, 20
  - existence of in AECs, 20, 21
- directed set, 20
- directed system, 20
- divides, 115
  - existence, 115
- Ehrenfeucht-Mostowski models, 29
- EM-models, 29
- full relative to, 85
- Galois saturated, 98
- Galois-indiscernible sequence, 104
  - existence, 95, 112–114
- Galois-type, 7, 23, 97
  - $\text{ga-S}(M)$ , 24
  - $\mu$ -splits, 50, 100
  - divides, 115
  - domain, 98
  - extension, 24, 98
  - realized, 24, 98

- restriction, 24, 98
- strong, 82
- Hanf number, 22, 29
- Intermediate Categoricity Conjecture,
  - 8
- interval extension, 64
- limit model
  - $(\mu, \mu^+)$ , 28
  - $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit, 26
  - $(\mu, \sigma)$ -limit model over  $M$ , 26
  - are amalgamation bases, 31
  - existence, 27, 28, 35
- model-homogenous, 99
- Morley sequence, 105
  - existence, 95, 112–114
- nice towers
  - in  $\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}^*$ , 41
  - in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \mathfrak{A}}^*$ , 64
  - in  ${}^+\mathcal{K}_{\mu, \alpha}$ , 56
  - scattered, 64
- non- $\mu$ -splitting
  - extension property, 53
  - uniqueness, 54
- PC-class, 21
- projective class, 21
- pseudo-elementary class, 21
- reduced towers, 71
  - are continuous, 75
  - completely, 71
  - density of, 73
- relatively full, 85
  - existence, 94
- scattered towers, 62
- set of disjoint intervals, 62
- Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture
  - for  $L_{\omega_1, \omega}$ , 3
  - for abstract elementary classes, 5
  - partial solutions, 14–15
- stable, 24
  - $\beta$ -stable in  $\mu$ , 98
- strong types, 82
- tame, 108
- type, Galois, 7, 23, 97
- uniqueness of limit models, 90
  - conjecture, 16
  - solution, 90
  - of the same cofinality, 27

- of the same length, 27
- universal over, 25
  - $\kappa$ -universal over, 25
- weak disjoint amalgamation, 36–39

# ABSTRACT

Categoricity and Stability in Abstract Elementary Classes

by

Monica M. VanDieren

This thesis tackles the classification theory of non-elementary classes from two perspectives. In Chapter II we work towards a categoricity transfer theorem, while Chapter III focuses on the development of a stability theory for abstract elementary classes (AECs).

The results in Chapter II are in a context identified by Shelah and Villaveces in which the amalgamation property does not necessarily hold. The longterm goal is to solve Shelah's Categoricity Conjecture in this context. One of the first steps is to isolate a suitable notion of saturation. I have solved a conjecture of Shelah and Villaveces by proving the uniqueness of limit models, which will serve as our notion of saturation.

The work in Chapter III is joint with Rami Grossberg. We identify a general context (tame abstract elementary classes) in which we begin developing the stability theory. Using the notion of splitting introduced by Shelah for AECS, we prove the existence of Morley sequences in tame, stable AECs. It is feasible that this result will lead to a Stability Spectrum Theorem for tame AECs and may even motivate a workable definition of dividing.